

MUNPIA



BREAKERS 취룡 퓨전 판타지 장편소설

브레이커즈 1

Breakers

– 브레이커즈 –

- Part 5 -

-Author-
Chwiryong

Chapter 199

Awareness

10,000 years ago, the red dragon destroyed all the civilizations in the Demon World.

Numerous species lost their civilizations. There had been a loss of history and traditions, as well as culture and technology. Some species even lost their language.

Among the various species, there had been one with a particularly brilliant and great civilization. Those who ruled the Demon World drove the rebellion against the red dragon and, as a result, lost everything.

Unlike other species which had lost civilizations but still had survivors, this species had not even a single survivor. Their names had been erased along with their civilization and their history forgotten. However, they had also left something behind. The ruins of where the indigenous species used to live, as well as their relics, were scattered all over the Demon World.

Then someone thought...

It was strange. Why had the indigenous species been wiped out? Unlike the other species, why were there no survivors?

No, from the outset—were they really wiped out?

As the Black Flame Dragon rode the wind, Silvan left the control room and headed to the bridge. All the key personnel, except for Silvan, were already gathered there. Felicia, who had been waiting for Silvan to arrive, looked around and asked,

“Sword Duke, where will we join up with Zephyr orabeoni?”

Zephyr was currently near the Aegis Gate. Due to the fact that he was already in the north, the meetup point would differ depending on the party’s destination. Felicia’s

question included the location of Arch Lich Shutenberg. The sword duke stroked his beard and replied,

“Well, we have taken off, so I can talk about it now. You won’t be joining 2nd Prince.”

“Sword Duke?”

Felicia narrowed her eyes. The others were reacted in a similar way, so the sword duke added an explanation immediately.

“To be more precise, I alone will join the 2nd Prince.”

“Sword... Duke?”

The doubts of those in the bridge deepened. Everyone, including Felicia, looked confused, while the sword duke just stroked his beard and laughed.

“Don’t look at me with that expression. I am going to explain it, so relax.”

The sword duke placed several models on the map of the Demon World spread out in the bridge. Each of them were in a position which seemed to represent In-gong’s group, Zephyr’s group, and Shutenberg.

“It is very important for the Demon King’s Palace and the whole Demon World that Arch Lich Shutenberg is defeated. In fact, I asked if you wanted to participate, but I was actually going to compel you using the demon king’s name. I’m glad that it worked out well.”

Everyone’s eyes widened at the declaration that the sword duke was going to forcibly drag them along from the very beginning. However, all those gathered here were children of the demon king. They had already fought with enemies of the Demon World in the form of missions, so this wasn’t a new thing for them.

The sword duke laughed at the subtle looks of the princes and princesses and continued talking.

“1st Prince and 4th Princess will also participate in this work. Actually, all the princes and princesses are fighting, except for 3rd Prince who is still in Curtis.”

The sword duke placed two additional models on the map of the Demon World. The model representing Baikal was placed at the Aegis Gate, while the model of Anastasia was placed in a very familiar place to In-gong.

‘Master, Enger Plains!’

Green Wind shouted. It was a cry only for In-gong’s ears, but the sword duke smiled like he had heard it.

“You will join 4th Princess at Enger Plains. I will go alone to the north and join 2nd Prince.”

The sword duke moved his hands, and the models were split into two groups. Chris looked at it and asked,

“Sword Duke, are you thinking about creating a pincer attack?”

“Yes.”

The group centered on In-gong would head to the north, while Zephyr’s group would march to the west.

“Arch Lich Shutenberg isn’t a fool. He will notice if we move. So, we have to scatter his gaze.”

That made sense, but Chris spoke with a bit of displeasure,

“Then Sword Duke and Hyung-nim will be doing everything?”

Their group had the advantage in numbers, but Zephyr dominated them in power. Among the children of the demon king, Baikal and Zephyr would move together with the sword duke. If so, In-gong’s group was just bait, so it was natural to feel bad.

The sword duke shook his head.

“That isn’t it. This side also needs to succeed. If either side knocks down Shutenberg, then that is enough. It isn’t just 4th Princess at Enger Plains. My sura warriors will be arriving right now. Make them your guides.”

Chris frowned at the sword duke's further explanation but nodded. Despite the sword duke joining Zephyr, having more troops sounded good.

However, In-gong had other thoughts. No matter how many troops they had, it was impossible to make up for the sword duke's absolute power. When the sword duke said that either side could succeed, In-gong felt like there was something which was still being concealed.

"Sword Duke, why aren't the captains coming out?"

The captains were the best military power of the Demon King's Palace. No matter how important defending the north was, this was a mission where the sword duke was moving personally. If the captains didn't move in this situation, then what was the point of their positions?

The sword duke looked at Felicia's disgruntled face, which looked just like Chris', and replied,

"Princess, aren't I enough?"

"No, it isn't like that..."

Although the sword duke was laughing loudly, it was a serious incident. Felicia started fidgeting, and the sword duke laughed again.

"Princess is really funny."

Felicia's face wrinkled again at his words, but the sword duke disregarded it. He stroked his beard and explained,

"The captains need to defend Aegis Gate. The Winter King seems to have started moving."

"The Winter King!"

Felicia exclaimed with surprise. The Winter King wasn't just the king of the northern barbarians, but also the king of all things beyond the Aegis Gate. He had only appeared as a background story in Knight Saga, but he had power comparable to the demon king.

“Originally, the princes and princesses would’ve gathered at the Aegis Gate to confront the Winter King. But Shutenberg’s invasion is closer.”

If the opponent was the Winter King, then it was understandable to put the captains on standby. It was already 200 years ago, but when the demon king and the Winter King first clashed, two captains had been lost. It was the first and last time that a captain had been killed in the history of the Demon King’s Palace.

“Both of them... It is clear that something unusual is happening.”

The Winter King was the Winter King, but Shutenberg wasn’t ordinary either. Apart from the sword duke, the children of the demon king and the sura warriors were also being mobilized. Therefore, Shutenberg might be much stronger than Chris thought.

The sword duke nodded at Chris’ words.

“Yes, tremendous things are happening in the destiny of the Demon World. Then please do this.”

After the meeting in the bridge ended, the demon king’s children scattered to rest. The story was heavier than they thought, so the mental fatigue was significant. Rather than following the others, In-gong went up to the deck where the sword duke was enjoying the wind. It was stuffy inside the narrow cabin, but he had a more important reason.

“Sword Duke.”

“Prince.”

The sword duke turned like he had been waiting for In-gong’s call. It was as if he had been waiting in a place where no one was present, knowing that In-gong would come. In-gong took a deep breath as he stood next to the sword duke and said,

“I’d like to ask you one thing.”

“I can guess what it is, but go ahead. Ask.”

The sword duke was smiling, but his eyes were blank. After seeing them, In-gong was convinced of it. It was clear that the sword duke already knew.

‘Sword Duke, am I a pure-blooded gandharva?’

‘Correct. Prince is a pure-blooded gandharva. You don’t have a single drop of blood from the demon king.’

In-gong asked using message magic, and the sword duke used Trill to reply. The sword duke answered so naturally that In-gong felt awkward.

‘The 5th Queen... No, my mother... ’

‘It wasn’t an affair.’

The sword duke interrupted In-gong. He laughed and gazed far away.

‘The 5th Queen wasn’t like that. She truly loved the demon king.’

‘But... ’

‘Prince, I will tell you the most important thing. The demon king recognized you as a prince. No matter what anyone says, you are one of the two people closest to the throne of the demon king.’

This was an expected story. The demon king already knew everything, and yet, he had delivered the Seed of Extreme Nothingness to In-gong. The sword duke sighed and took out a blue ball the size of his thumb.

‘Watch this.’

In-gong felt a tremendous magic power in his hand. It was a magic power which he had encountered for the first time in his life, but In-gong knew its identity immediately. It was the magic power of 5th Queen Semita Ignus.

‘This bead contains the truth about the secret of Prince’s birth. You can only watch it once, so when you are ready, watch it with those you want to share the secret with.’

After those words, the sword duke left the deck. Once left alone, In-gong grasped the

bead and prepared his heart. There was no reason to delay any further.

“Green Wind, ask Carack, and my brothers and sisters to come to my room. Tell them not to come with their aides.”

‘I understand, Master.’

Green Wind left In-gong’s side. In-gong fell deep into thought as he headed for the bridge.

He had already shared the most important secret about the Conquest Knight with Felicia. So, there was no reason to hide this from her. Caitlin shared the Moonlight and Starlight Core with In-gong and was a member of the King’s Knights. So, she was trustworthy. Silvan was the same. He was also a member of the King’s Knights. Chris didn’t belong to the King’s Knights, and he was the most political person among the children of the demon king. However, he was a strong supporter of In-gong. He was a political person, so it was better to confide the story now instead of having it come out later.

This was a situation where the sword duke and demon king already knew In-gong’s status. Moreover, Chris knew about Caitlin’s birth secret. It was beneficial for the lycanthropes to side with In-gong.

In-gong sat in the room as the children of the demon king started to gather. When Felicia and Caitlin arrived, it was still okay. However, after Silvan and Chris appeared, the cabin instantly became cramped.

In-gong sat in the middle of his small single bed, with Felicia and Caitlin on his right and left. Silvan and Chris sat on chairs in front of the bed.

“Shutra, what did you call us to talk about?”

Once seated, Caitlin asked as if she was representing everyone else. In-gong smiled at her and sighed. He raised the blue bead the sword duke had given him.

“Everyone, I wanted you to watch this with me.”

Everyone’s eyes became focused, and In-gong injected magic power into the bead.

Chapter 200

Awareness #2

5th Queen Semita Ignus' magic power wrapped around In-gong's magic power, which was flowing into the bead. The two magic powers naturally intertwined and became one. As the blue bead gave off a soft light, a familiar yet strong magic power emerged from inside it. This magic power was the demon king's magic power.

"Aba... mama?"

Felicia cried out with surprise at the demon king's magic power, while everyone else simply gulped.

With a nervous expression, In-gong stopped supplying power for a moment in order to breathe. That was when the images and voices coming from the bead paused like there a seal had been placed on it.

Naturally, everyone's gazes turned from the bead to In-gong. With his eyes, In-gong asked Chris to wait for a moment, and then he took deep breaths. At that moment, the person he had been waiting for opened the door and entered.

"Prince."

"Carack, I was waiting."

"I'm sorry. I am a little late."

Carack scratched his head and smiled before closing the door. The cabin was already full, so he was forced to stand.

"Shutra?"

It was In-gong who had forbidden the aides from attending this meeting. However, In-gong's aide, Carack, had entered. Chris sent In-gong a questioning gaze, but In-gong just smiled. In-gong was going to reveal an important secret in this place. The sword

duke had said the bead would only play the video one time, so it was natural to bring Carack.

‘It is Carack.’

He didn’t need any more reasons or rationale. As Felicia glanced at Carack, she was convinced. After all, she was the one who knew best that Carack was always with In-gong. Chris let out a discontented breath but gave up as he leaned back. It was a signal to finish this quickly.

However, before injecting magic power into the bead, In-gong turned to face everyone. The reason he paused hadn’t just been to wait for Carack.

“First of all, I have something to say.”

“Say?”

“It is about my birth.”

Chris flinched reflexively at the word ‘birth’. Felicia and Silvan had no idea what to say, while Caitlin was just curious, since she knew nothing about her birth.

In-gong breathed out to speak again. He was already Shutra, so when he tried to tell the story, his lips didn’t work well because of nerves. The sword was already half-drawn, so In-gong squeezed his heart firmly. He then opened his mouth, and a surprisingly low and detached voice emerged.

“I talked to the sword duke. The sword duke said that no matter what happens, I’m still the son of the demon king... and one of the two candidates closest to the throne.”

He stated the two most important things first. It was not just Chris. The other children of the demon king also reacted after hearing that In-gong was one of the two closest candidates to the throne of the demon king. However, it was generally a good response.

“Shutra, what are you talking about?”

Felicia asked cautiously. It was nice to have a declaration from the sword duke about In-gong’s position, but his previous words were also in her mind.

‘No matter what happens, he’s still the son of the demon king’ sounded sinister.

No, it was more than that. Felicia’s expression and voice were quite rigid. She didn’t forget the first thing In-gong said. There was clearly something regarding In-gong’s birth. Chris’ face was stiff as well. Chris was very political, but he was still only in his late teens. With the thought that In-gong might know Caitlin’s secret, Chris’ face was filled with tension and confusion.

“The sword duke... he said that the demon king knew all of it. And this bead contains all the answers.”

In-gong started injecting his magic power into the bead again. A warm light was once again emitted from the blue bead.

“This is a video that can only be seen once. So, I called all of you here.”

In-gong had already decided to reveal his secrets to Felicia, Silvan, Caitlin, and Chris. So, instead of talking about it, they would see the video together. As In-gong kept injecting magic power, the bead started to float. The bead stopped at In-gong’s chest height and started to show a holographic video. As expected, it showed the demon king.

“Abamama.”

Felicia said with a low moan. The image of the demon king, which was the same size as the real demon king, faced In-gong and opened his mouth.

“Shutra, Semita’s child. If you are watching this video, then you have somehow realized the truth about your birth.”

It wasn’t a real-time conversation; this was a recorded video.

“It is as you already know. You are not a child born from me and Semita.”

Dismayed silence filled the cabin at the demon king’s blunt words. In particular, Chris showed a huge reaction. He barely prevented a sound from emerging, but his eyes were huge.

“Shutra, listen to my words carefully. This is all true with nothing omitted.”

The demon king began telling the story. It was a story which couldn't be imagined, even by In-gong.

“The gandharva felt a sense of crisis. They seemed to have felt desperate after being defeated by the draconians. Maybe the gandharva hoped to get revenge on the draconians.”

Zentra Ignus, 5th Queen Semita Ignus' uncle and king of the gandharvas, had wanted the next demon king to be a gandharva. However, Semita hadn't been able to have the demon king's child. To make matters worse, the draconian 1st Prince, Baikal, and 2nd Prince, Zephyr, had been born with exceptional talent.

“The nervous Zentra had a dangerous idea. So, he whispered sweet lies to his niece and my wife, Semita.”

Zentra had then placed the essence of the gandharva god, Dhrtarastra, which the gandharva had been protecting, into Semita's womb. He wanted to create a divine gandharva child through powerful magic rituals.

At the time, Semita had thought the child would be born with the demon king's blood. Perhaps, Semita had thought this because she either believed in Zentra too much or because she so desperately wanted to believe it. Maybe it was both.

“Thus, you were born Shutra.”

Zentra's plan had failed. Shutra had been born without a soul and couldn't communicate properly, while Semita noticed that the child was unrelated to the demon king. She could have deceived the demon king, but she hadn't been able to do it. Then the demon king recognized that Shutra wasn't his child.

The demon king had gone on to punish the gandharvas. Rather than slaughtering them, the entire species would be imprisoned for 200 years. Semita had blamed herself. She had asked to be stripped of her position as queen and punished. However, the demon king hadn't allowed it. Semita retained her position, and the demon king recognized Shutra as his child.

“Shutra, no matter what anyone says, you are the 9th Prince of the Demon King's

Palace. This fact will never change.”

The demon king ended with these emphatic words.

Then all the pieces fell into place. The demon king loved the 5th Queen as well. In-gong could only think of it like that.

As In-gong manipulated the bead, he found out that the video of the demon king was added recently. Therefore, he could understand the feelings of the demon king more deeply. It had been more than 10 years since 5th Queen Semita died, but the demon king still retained his feelings for the 5th Queen.

The image of the demon king vanished, and a new video emerged of 5th Queen Semita Ignus. The pale faced Semita repeated the story the demon king had just told. As she spoke, there were a few moments in which she seemed to be on the verge of tears.

Perhaps the demon king had added his video because he had been expecting this. Semita looked bad in the video, like she had an immense guilt pressing down upon her. As she whispered, Semita finally started crying. Her words were filled with a sense of guilt and love for Shutra, who had been born without a soul.

Tears filled In-gong’s eyes. They were tears shed by the body of Shutra who had been born without a soul—no, they were In-gong’s tears, rather than Shutra’s. In-gong and Shutra had already become one a long time ago.

Then the blue bead lost its light. The video ended, and the bead turned into powder after fulfilling its task.

The atmosphere was heavy inside the cabin. Everybody looked at each other, but none of them could open their mouths. In-gong wasn’t the child of the demon king. However, the demon king recognized In-gong as his child.

Chris was convinced by this and felt like he had finally realized the secret to In-gong’s rapid growth. It was due to the essence of the gandharva god, Dhrtarastra.

At the same time, Chris also felt some fear. If the demon king recognized In-gong as his child, then what about Caitlin? Had the demon king also noticed the truth about Caitlin? If so, why did the demon king remain silent? Did he not know about Caitlin yet?

Chris took deep breaths to calm himself down. The important thing right now wasn't Caitlin but In-gong.

Caitlin was the one who moved first. She wiped away In-gong's tears without speaking. Then Felicia covered In-gong's hands with her own and said,

"Shutra."

In-gong turned at the call. Felicia smiled brightly and winked as she spoke in a bright voice,

"It's okay. It is as Abamama said. There is no change. You are still my brother, and I am still your sister."

"Felicia noona."

Felicia grabbed In-gong's hand gently. Her hands were very warm. Silvan laughed too.

"Both Abamama and the sword duke acknowledges that there is no problem. Shutra, I am also like Felicia. I am still your older brother and you are still my younger brother."

The reaction of the dark elves was as expected. However, even though it was expected, In-gong still felt touched, and his heart warmed at their words. That was when a heated gaze headed his way.

"Okay, that is your decision. Rather, it is a good thing."

Chris said abruptly as he shook off his concerns about Caitlin.

"Chris?"

Felicia looked at Chris with a puzzled expression. Why did it seem as though he really liked this situation?

"It is good. Now, there is nothing in the way."

Chris laughed and placed a hand on In-gong's shoulder.

“It does make a difference Shutra. The future bride candidate... no, is Caitlin a future queen candidate?”

“Eh?”

In-gong blinked. It was the same with the rest of the group. They had never imagined that the words ‘queen candidate’ would appear in this situation. Moreover, the other person was none other than Caitlin.

As Caitlin panicked, Chris continued to speak,

“There is no blood shared between both of you, so it doesn’t matter. In any case, the demon king is the law in the Demon World. If you marry Caitlin after becoming the demon king, then the lycanthropes will be relieved.”

In the midst of his panic, In-gong was convinced of something, but it wasn’t because of Chris’ logic. A thought flashed through his mind. 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight often said that the demon king was the law. She had also asked In-gong who he thought was better between Caitlin and Felicia. Additionally, Chris’ response didn’t seem to be one that he had just thought up. It was clear that he already had the idea of marrying Caitlin to In-gong.

This was because the blood of the demon king didn’t flow in Caitlin.

‘No, that still matters. What is this really? Is it possible?’

Were they intending to reveal Caitlin’s birth secret? Or would In-gong and Caitlin just get married? Did they want to destroy any dispute about Caitlin’s birth using the power of the demon king? Even if he had the power of the demon king, it was still far-fetched. However, Chris and Elaine were the ones who planned this. The two people wouldn’t have thought about it if it wasn’t possible.

As In-gong continued to drown in his chaotic thoughts, Chris laughed even louder. Then while everyone was still in a state of confusion, he turned to Caitlin and asked,

“Caitlin, what do you think? If it is Shutra, is it good? No good?”

“Eh? Uh... t-that...”

Caitlin shrugged from where she was sitting next to In-gong and wiping his tears. Her pale face turned red so quickly it seemed like she would burst. Until In-gong and Shutra had become one, she had no encounters with Shutra. They didn't grow up together, so there wasn't the so-called Westermarck effect.

"No good? This is Shutra who you always call amazing."

"O-Oppa!"

Caitlin shouted loudly. Chris patted Caitlin on the head.

"So, tell me honestly. How is it? Not bad?"

Caitlin gulped several times and then glanced at In-gong who was feeling tense and nervous. Caitlin's already red face turned redder as she poked her fingers together and said in a low voice,

"Y-Yes... g-good..."

Then she covered her face with both hands like she was hiding her embarrassment.

'W-What? This fierce cuteness.'

In-gong could barely breathe. It felt like his heart would burst at any moment. Chris' smile widened. It was at that moment that...

"W-Wait a minute! Wait a minute! Chris?"

Felicia cried out angrily. Chris just chuckled at her and replied easily,

"Felicia noonim already declared that you are Shutra's sister. So, back off."

She had said that. Just a few minutes ago, it had been a very warm discussion. As Chris taunted Felicia, her expression changed wildly. Her eyes shook like an earthquake was occurring. However, it was only for a second. Felicia stared at In-gong and Caitlin, and barely managed to speak.

"Ah, no? I-I also like Shutra? I-I-I see him as a man?"

Her face was red, and her eyes were a little teary. It was obvious that she felt tremendous embarrassment saying this. All eyes, including In-gong's, turned to Felicia. Even Caitlin, who was struggling with her embarrassment, stared at Felicia with surprised eyes.

"Ah... uh... I-I mean! I see you as a man!"

Felicia screamed and turned her head away, but she didn't open her fan as usual. Rather, her hand holding In-gong's squeezed tighter. It was like she was determined not to back down.

"Kuk!"

In-gong groaned without realising it. This situation was an assault on his heart. He felt like he was going to explode from Caitlin's and Felicia's cuteness.

"Felicia! I love you too!"

Silvan exclaimed suddenly with both arms wide open. Some of his brotherly love ran wild, but it seemed to be an attempt to relieve her embarrassment.

"Ah, come on!"

However, it only worsened Felicia's embarrassment. The atmosphere in the cabin was chaotic.

While the demon king's children were in a panic, Carack alone shook his head. The significance of the meeting was lost, but it didn't bother him much. It felt good.

"This is youth."

Carack relaxed against the door with folded arms and smiled warmly.

"What is with this subtly sweet, happy, and dangerous atmosphere?"

Chapter 201

Awareness #3

It was Chris who broke the deadlock even though he was sitting still. He watched the tension with a delighted expression before laughing and pulling Caitlin up.

“I’d like to finish it today, but I’ll let it go for now.”

Chris’ words caused everyone to stir uneasily. The one with the greatest reaction was Felicia.

“F-Finish! Chris! What the hell are you imagining?”

Felicia shouted with a red face. Shame was clearly present in Felicia’s voice, causing Chris to widen his eyes and speak with a coy expression,

“What is Noonim imagining? Huh?”

In-gong also wondered this. What did she imagine from Chris’ words? In-gong’s face turned redder at the thought, and it was the same with Felicia. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that her whole body was red.

“Ah, no... I mean...”

She stammered in a tearful voice, but she couldn’t think of a proper excuse. Chris grinned, while Caitlin asked with confusion,

“Unni?”

Her eyes were innocent and clear. Seeing Caitlin’s expression, Felicia groaned with dismay like it was hard to face that pureness. Once again, it was Silvan who saved Felicia.

“Sob, sob. Felicia, this is the heart of a father who is giving his daughter away in marriage.”

“Ah, come on!”

Felicia reacted like usual, but her eyes were filled with gratitude toward Silvan.

“Hmm, hmm. Then shall we end it here? Delia, Seira, and Sepira will be worried.”

Carack, who had been watching the situation calmly, spoke and wrapped up the situation. Silvan, who had been struggling to overcome this situation, immediately agreed with Carack.

“Yes, let’s get up first. It isn’t just today. Let’s talk about this slowly in the future.”

Time was needed for everyone to cool down and think. Chris seemed to agree, but then he laughed and said roguishly,

“Think about it Shutra. Caitlin will be an even more beautiful woman in the future.”

“O-Oppa.”

Caitlin felt his share of shame. As In-gong watched Caitlin try to hide behind Chris’ big body, he nodded inadvertently. Caitlin, who was just ahead of her 16th birthday, was still a teenage girl. As Chris said, she would become even more amazing in the future. Once Chris spoke like this, Silvan felt some rivalry as he gazed toward Felicia.

“Shutra, our Felicia is already an amazing beauty, but she will become more so in the future. Felicia is always the best.”

Unlike Caitlin who had risen from her seat, Felicia was still sitting next to In-gong. When he thought about it, they were still holding hands. Felicia flinched and turned her head away again. Thanks to that, she exposed her red neck and ears.

“Prince, the situation is reoccurring.”

Carack once again organized the situation. Silvan was immediately aware that he had embarrassed Felicia further and backpedalled.

“Well, yes. I should stop now. Good night, Shutra.”

Silvan then reached out and pulled Felicia up. She staggered instantly, like she had lost strength in her legs, but soon stood upright and opened her fan.

“Yes, good night. Shutra.”

Felicia stuttered like she couldn’t shake off her agitation even with the fan, making her cuter in In-gong’s eyes.

‘It is too much.’

Everything she did looked cute. As In-gong was thinking this, Caitlin also opened her mouth. Her cheeks were still red, but she showed a more relaxed smile than Felicia.

“Have a good night’s sleep. Have good dreams.”

“Yes, dream of Caitlin.”

“Yes.”

Chris interjected, and In-gong replied automatically, making the mood odd again.

Silvan seemed to want to tell In-gong to dream of Felicia, while Caitlin punched Chris with resentment and Felicia buried her face in her fan. Carack couldn’t stand this endless loop anymore, so he said to the princes and princesses,

“Come on, go to sleep. It’s late in the night.”

He waved his hand and chased them away.

“Huoong...”

After everyone left and only Carack remained, In-gong let out a long breath. It was a sigh filled with many emotions. Carack gazed at him and said,

“Prince, it was hard to look at. I felt embarrassed for you.”

“Hey, why should I be embarrassed?”

“Isn’t your mouth smiling too much? That is why. You will understand if you look in a

mirror.”

Carack was as sharp as always, and In-gong flinched for a moment before smiling coolly.

“Well... it is great.”

They were Felicia and Caitlin, not anybody else. The two people liked In-gong despite their embarrassment, so why shouldn't he feel good? Carack shook his head at In-gong's shameless words.

“I was aware of this after meeting you, but you really were far from your brothers and sisters.”

If their period of growing up together had been long, then things might have been different today. In-gong nodded in agreement.

“Well... there was nothing in the first place.”

It wasn't an exaggeration. Before becoming one with In-gong, Shutra had virtually no relationship with his other siblings. The Red Lightning Tribe mission was the first time he had seen Caitlin, let alone talked to her. It was no different with Felicia.

‘And...’

Felicia and Caitlin weren't In-gong's sisters in the first place. However, he couldn't say this, even if the other person was Carack. It was a story that he hadn't even shared with Felicia, who he had shared almost all his other secrets.

“Anyway... thank you. I didn't think that Prince would tell me this secret.”

Carack said, turning his head sideways. It was embarrassing for Carack to say something like this. In fact, Carack's reaction was natural. Other than Carack, the other aides hadn't been invited and then a very shocking fact had been revealed.

“Of course, I should tell you. You are Carack.”

In-gong laughed, and Carack scratched his head awkwardly. Tonight seemed to be a night of embarrassment.

“Then I’m asking as Carack... Prince, who truly is the better one?”

Carack asked, turning the warm atmosphere awkward. In-gong cleared his mind and then took a deep breath.

“I think I should become the demon king first. Otherwise, what is the point of discussing it?”

“Such a big goal?”

“Of course.”

This world was very different from Knight Saga in many ways, but In-gong still had the Day of Massacre in his head. He wouldn’t allow himself to be truly happy until he was the demon king. Elaine’s and Chris’ plans for marriage would’ve been established on the premise that In-gong would become the demon king.

“Understood. Then, I will really go now. Will you use the dream pillow so that you don’t lose your strength?”

“Ah, no. I won’t use the pillow today.”

In-gong was already in a situation where his delusions were running wild. He was afraid of what he would dream the moment he used the pillow.

“Then Master, go for a walk. Master is disgusting right now.”

Green Wind suddenly appeared behind In-gong and hugged his neck. Carack nodded as well.

“It is a good idea. The cold wind is the best to restore your spirit at night.”

In other words, it would calm him down.

“Okay, then I will be going for a while.”

He had just been in a heated situation, so the cool wind at night sounded quite nice.

“Go safely.”

Carack opened the door of the cabin with a chuckle.

There were some dark elves on the deck, but fortunately, Felicia and Caitlin weren't present. In-gong greeted the dark elves before heading to a place that was deserted. The cool night breeze cleared his head.

In-gong became emotional and raised his head toward the night sky. It felt like the stars in the sky were falling toward him.

“Prince.”

“Sword Duke.”

The sword duke approached from behind. He grabbed a seat next to In-gong and stretched.

“That look... you seem refreshed.”

“Yes.”

The sword duke had been worrying about his reaction. Once In-gong answered calmly, the sword duke sighed and smiled.

“I am relieved. Yes, what about the reaction of the others... Prince? What is with that expression?”

The sword duke frowned and tilted his head. He had expected a reaction, but he didn't think In-gong would look so embarrassed.

“Uh, um. That...”

In-gong hesitated before telling the sword duke the story. He didn't tell every detail, but the flow was straightforward, making the sword duke curious.

“What can I say... I imagined this development to happen further in the future.”

“I-Is that so?”

The shock of In-gong’s birth secret being revealed had changed to confusion and embarrassment.

“The 4th Queen’s mindset... I thought it would come eventually... But uh, well, this is quick... Moreover...”

“Moreover?”

“It is strange to say something like this, but shouldn’t you normally feel distress over your identity or something like that?”

The sword duke asked.

“Uh...”

It was like he said. As far as Shutra’s birth was concerned, Shutra wasn’t a child born out of a natural process but an artificially created one. Usually in this situation, the novel or manhwa protagonist would feel a serious confusion over their identity.

‘I am not XX,’ or ‘I’m not human,’ or ‘I don’t care, I am human!’...They would think things like that. Then they would usually accept their identity through some dramatic situation.

However, In-gong was different. He didn’t feel any confusion over his identity.

‘Well, Shutra...’

In-gong was already Shutra, but something still felt separate. If he had many memories of the 5th Queen, then it might be different. However, it had only been a year since In-gong became Shutra. Additionally, the problem of Felicia and Caitlin was far more important than some confusion over his identity.

After seeing that In-gong didn’t feel any identity crisis, the sword duke laughed once again.

“Well, you don’t have to react like that. It is good. Prince actually seems more

dependable. You are mentally tough.”

“Thank you.”

In-gong replied coolly. The sword duke didn’t continue talking about In-gong’s identity but switched the topic instead.

“Prince, do you remember the first time we met?”

“I remember.”

It was when In-gong had been facing the man with the blue aura at Thunderdoom Fortress. In-gong had been incapable of beating the enemy before him ,and everyone was prepared for death. That memory was still vivid.

The sword duke laughed and stared straight at In-gong. In-gong had been impressed by the sword duke, and now the sword duke was impressed by In-gong. It wasn’t because In-gong was a being created using the essence of the gandharva god. There was something more special about In-gong.

“It isn’t because of the divinity of the gandharva. I am really looking forward to Prince’s future. Someday, I might bow to you after you are the demon king.”

This was why the demon king had given In-gong the Seed of Extreme Nothingness.

“The group led by Prince is important. Look after the other princes and princesses.”

“Yes, Sword Duke.”

There were no more questions and answers.

The sword duke patted In-gong’s shoulder and left, while In-gong stayed on the deck for a bit longer.

Two days later, the Black Flame Dragon arrived at Enger Plains. Anastasia had already arrived first, so she greeted the party.

As elegant as always, she frowned when she saw the party before her.

“What is with this subtly sweet, happy, and dangerous atmosphere?”

The feeling around Shutra was quite different from when she last saw them. Chris was smiling more wickedly than usual, while Silvan was unsure about what to do. Felicia and Caitlin on In-gong’s left and right looked unnatural, as Caitlin kept on fidgeting and Felicia never removed the fan from her face.

In the center of all that, In-gong was just smiling. Anastasia felt quite favourable toward In-gong, but she couldn’t help wanting to beat that expression off his face.

“T-That... it is nothing. Yes, there is nothing.”

Felicia said quickly. Anastasia looked dubious as her eyes narrowed even further.

“Hrmm...?”

Her questioning gaze was scary, but no one opened their mouths. In-gong was familiar with Anastasia, but there was a clear difference in position between Anastasia’s faction and Shutra’s faction. Anastasia was still a powerful adversary and head of a rival faction, so she couldn’t be told his birth secret.

“What—what are you doing?”

Anastasia attacked Felicia, who was the closest and seemed the easiest. The normal Felicia would’ve replied in a certain way, but she didn’t answer.

“How suspicious.”

Anastasia’s eyes narrowed even more. Felicia, who was in charge of Anastasia, was in a helpless state, so there was no one to deal with her. Chris was able to compete with Anastasia, but he just laughed like the situation was funny. Then just as In-gong was about to open his mouth...

“4th Princess, shouldn’t you move? It seems like there are more people who want to say hello.”

The sword duke moved like the wind and spoke to Anastasia. She was surprised by

the sword duke's appearance but regained her poise as always.

"4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion greets the sword duke."

"A pleasure. You are still as beautiful as ever."

Anastasia was one of several people who had gathered at the Enger Plains to greet them, and she displayed a formal greeting to the sword duke. Felicia sighed with relief when Anastasia's attention was turned away from her and toward the sword duke instead.

"Come this way. We have prepared a small welcoming ceremony. It would be better to exchange greetings there."

Anastasia said gracefully as she led the way. At that moment, In-gong saw the people behind Anastasia. There was some good faces.

'Ferocious Eyes.'

As the name suggests, the eyes were ferocious. However, despite the scary eyes, In-gong just smiled at him. It wasn't just Ferocious Eyes who In-gong greeted gladly. Among the crowd at Enger Plains, many of them were In-gong's people.

Vandal's large size made him stand out as he smiled at In-gong, and there was a beautiful woman smiling beside Vandal.

The succubus, Nayatra...

It was her.

"Your Highness, I will report about the information I've collected."

"Yes."

Chapter 202

Awareness #4

Anastasia's welcoming party consisted of a mixture of nightmares and centaurs.

It was an outdoor banquet hall for the centaurs, while the nightmares provided the cold alcohol and spicy dishes. The centaurs sat down around a large fire with the sword duke, children of the demon king, and Ferocious Eyes.

Satyrs were dancing around the big fire. There were also various musical instruments playing. However, the traditional music of the centaurs were based on the drums, so the whole atmosphere was reminiscent of being in an army.

After the satyrs, it was the succubi who showed off their dancing skills. Unlike the satyrs' dance which was energetic and raw, the succubi were gorgeous and sensual.

Everyone had already drunk some alcohol, so they couldn't help swallowing at the sight, while Chris covered Caitlin's eyes with a big palm. Caitlin pouted and complained, but no one took her side.

The party was a prelude to the introductions of three groups which had arrived through the transportation formation. In-gong already knew Anastasia's and Vandal's groups.

So, the sword duke introduced the last group, the sura warriors, to In-gong.

"Prince, you were introduced to Indara before."

"It is great to see 9th Prince."

Indara greeted him in a cool voice, and In-gong nodded. In-gong had already knew Indara from the mission at the Sanctuary, so only brief greetings were exchanged. With Indara as the leader, 20 sura warriors had left the Sanctuary. This was a considerable number when considering the fact that there were only dozens of sura warriors.

By the time the greetings were over, the succubi's dance had finished. As the music stopped, Caitlin stared at Chris' palm and asked in an uncomfortable voice,

"Has it finished?"

"It has finished. You can now look."

Chris removed his palm and patted Caitlin's head. It was a sweet touch, but Caitlin was still upset.

"I can see it. It is me."

"Uh, you can't watch it yet. It is too stimulating."

Chris knocked on Caitlin's head lightly. He was more like a father taking care of his daughter, instead of a brother.

However, Caitlin was still dissatisfied. Caitlin was already 15 years old, and her 16th birthday would soon be arriving. In the Demon King's Palace, 18 was considered the age of adulthood. However, in the lycanthrope society, it was actually 16 years old. She was tired of being so controlled that she couldn't even watch the succubi dance. While Caitlin was pouting, the sword duke chuckled and said,

"Princess, don't be too upset. The sura will show you their sword dance."

"The sura's sword dance?"

"Yes, it is quite exciting."

The sword duke shrugged and gestured to Indara, who delivered a brief request to the satyr musicians and stood in front of the large fire with nine sura warriors.

"I will start."

As soon as Indara laughed, a strong aura storm pushed around the big fire. It was because 10 powerful suras had opened their aura at the same time.

Once everyone's gazes were focused on them, Indara and the suras started moving their swords. Thanks to their aura, the swords shone in different ways as they danced

among the flames, creating a spectacular sight.

Caitlin quickly fell for the sword dance. Anastasia, who was still questioning Felicia about what was going on, soon forgot about that matter for a while.

In-gong also watched the sword dance with excited eyes. It was due to the splendor and beauty as well as the hidden meanings in the sura sword dance.

[Sura Sword Dance Lv1 has been learnt.]
[Understanding of Sura Heart Law has increased.]

The clear voice of the woman melted naturally into the music.

Then some time passed by. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that everyone in the banquet hall was captured by the suras. The excited centaurs and satyrs woke up from their daze and applauded. During this exciting atmosphere, the sword duke laughed and glanced at In-gong.

"Prince. Can Prince give us a show?"

"Huh?"

"The gandharva are a species of heavenly dancers. Please fulfill this request for me."

The sword duke's voice was louder than usual. It seemed to be directed at those around him, rather than In-gong. And it worked. All eyes gazed at In-gong expectantly, with Caitlin's shining the brightest. The sword duke observed Caitlin as he asked,

"Do you want to see?"

"Yes, yes! I want to see!"

She was shouting so excitedly that it couldn't be helped.

'I received a bunch of gandharva passives, so it should be okay somehow.'

He had also just learnt Sura Sword Dance. When In-gong got up from his seat, the atmosphere of the banquet suddenly became heated. In-gong thought about it as he

walked slowly toward the big fire.

‘Let’s go for something brilliant.’

However, he felt embarrassed to dance alone.

“Green Wind.”

Green Wind showed up in solid form the moment In-gong called her. In-gong grabbed one of Green Wind’s hands naturally and moved like he was escorting his wife.

“Ohhh!”

The surrounding people quickly became noisier and more excited, and In-gong commanded Green Wind to scatter the heat of the big fire. Then because of what In-gong was going to do next, he took a deep breath.

“Spiritualism, Four Heavenly Kings.”

“Apostle Appointment, Green Wind.”

In-gong and Green Wind whispered at the same time, and at that moment, a brilliant light appeared and they transformed. The centaurs and satyrs couldn’t even speak to express their admiration. In his divine state, In-gong was beautiful. The fragrance of his Divine Scent spread about and made everyone fall into ecstasy. Green Wind was also formidable. The centaurs and satyrs still prayed to her, a beautiful goddess of the wind.

In-gong and Green Wind held hands and started dancing. It was an awkward dance, but that didn’t matter.

“Ahh...”

The satyrs held their hands together, like they were praying, and burst into tears, while some of the centaurs grabbed their chests, and Amita sniffed happily. However, that wasn’t the end. The succubi watching the dance moaned and fainted.

Yet, no one looked at them. They were too engrossed in In-gong and Green Wind’s dance.

‘A failure.’

In-gong thought as he saw the devastated banquet hall. He had consumed a huge amount of magic power when using Pheromones and Divine Scent.

‘There are even people who fainted.’

However, that was natural.

The succubus species were very sensitive to pheromones. For them, In-gong’s pheromones were effective enough to be a natural enemy.

The expression in everyone’s gazes toward In-gong changed after the welcoming party. Even Anastasia was looking at In-gong with envious eyes. Thanks to this, Felicia’s struggle with Anastasia was alleviated. There was one more person who was fascinated by In-gong.

“Your Highness, I will report about the information I collected.”

“Yes.”

After the banquet, Nayatra came up with him with a blank face, and In-gong nodded awkwardly. Nayatra’s reaction wasn’t burdensome, nor did In-gong feel burdened because of his beauty. The reason why he felt awkward was because of Nayatra’s mission.

‘I can’t say it.’

Nayatra had left the Demon King’s Palace to figure out the sin of the gandharva. Despite her months of hard work and information gathering, In-gong already knew what the sin was. Additionally, Nayatra played no role in In-gong figuring out that information.

‘Ugh...’

He was struggling because he felt sorry toward her. In-gong pinched his thigh and took

deep breaths as Nayatra started her report.

This was a summary of Nayatra's report:

She found out where the gandharva were confined.

Contacting the gandharva was also a success.

However, she couldn't figure out what the sin of the gandharva was. Everybody's mouths were shut firmly.

"I'm sorry. I am still lacking."

"No, that is good enough. You did really well."

He meant it sincerely. In retrospect, it was natural that Nayatra couldn't figure it out. This was a secret involving the birth of a prince of the Demon King's Palace. No matter how talented Nayatra was, she wouldn't be able to figure it out in just a few months.

Additionally, unlike the lycanthropes, the gandharva were all imprisoned. Just getting into contact with them was a significant achievement.

"Your Highness, the gandharva had no access to outside information. Therefore, they didn't know anything about Your Highness' performance."

The gandharva hadn't received any external information for the last 15 years since after Shutra's birth, to be exact. However, that was natural. Nayatra paused and gulped. She licked his lips before lowering her voice.

"Your Highness, I used some unreasonable methods to collect information. Please understand."

"Nayatra?"

"I contacted a gandharva and said that Your Highness was seeking cooperation with him."

In-gong understood what Nayatra was worried about. The gandharva were confined,

so it was a sin to approach them without authorization. If the story of In-gong contacting the gandharva leaked, then it would be a big problem for him.

“The gandharva didn’t reveal their sin, but they are very pleased about Your Highness.”

Nayatra pulled out a bead from a box she had prepared in advance. It wasn’t a bead which recorded images like the one the sword duke had given him. In-gong could feel the power of divinity the moment he touched the bead.

‘It contains divine power.’

The bead was a bit strange, but it was clearly something to strengthen In-gong’s divinity. This was probably one of the artifacts of Dhrtarastra that the gandharva kept.

It was a very helpful harvest. In-gong patted Nayatra on the shoulder.

“Thanks for the trouble. You have distinguished yourself.”

Nayatra was very pleased by In-gong’s compliment and spoke in an excited voice,

“Your Highness, I will try to contact the gandharva again. With a little more effort, I will be able to discover what their sin is.”

Enthusiasm was flowing in her eyes and voice. In-gong calmed Nayatra down.

“It’s okay, Nayatra. This degree of investigation is enough.”

“But Your Highness!”

Nayatra objected. In-gong stared straight into her eyes and declared,

“No, it is okay. More research is too risky. And I don’t want Nayatra to be in danger. Nayatra is a very precious person to me.”

“Ahhh...”

Nayatra sighed. It wouldn’t be strange if she fainted. In-gong thought it was strange, but he decided to be glad that she wasn’t stubborn anymore. He laughed and gave Nayatra a bottle of Heavenly Wine he had prepared in advance.

“Here, Nayatra. It is too early to call it a prize, but this is a gift from me. It is made from a mixture of my magic power and other things.”

“Thank you, Your Highness.”

Nayatra hugged the Heavenly Wine and thanked In-gong again. It seemed like she was still enchanted by his dance at the banquet hall.

‘Ah, I look like a bad guy.’

In-gong coughed a few times at the thought before leaving Nayatra. He wanted to stay with her longer, but there was still one more person In-gong needed to meet.

“Your popularity is great.”

“It is Sword Duke’s fault.”

The sword duke laughed at In-gong’s rebuke when he appeared like the wind in the barracks.

“Prince, I will be leaving Enger Plains tonight.”

“Tonight?”

“The north doesn’t have many transportation formations, so there are many places to where I need to run. I must hurry to join 2nd Prince as well as 1st Prince.”

The sword duke said with a smile before raising a hand to In-gong’s shoulder.

“Indara and 4th Princess will know the detailed schedule. I recommend that you leave the schedule to those two people.”

“I understand.”

The number of people who joined him on Enger Plains was over 100. There were the 20 suras led by Indara as well as Vandal’s independent unit which consisted of 100 troops. Anastasia led an elite unit too, so it was impossible to carry all of them on the Black Flame Dragon. Whether they liked it or not, they had to travel by land.

After finishing his talk, the sword duke tapped In-gong's shoulder again.

"Prince, I wish you good luck."

"Good luck to you as well."

Their next meeting would be beyond the Northern Limit Line, in front of Shutenberg's castle. The sword duke left the barracks with a quiet smile, and In-gong watched him leave.

Then the next afternoon...

In-gong's group headed toward the Northern Limit Line and beyond it.

"Having three batteries is really reliable."

"Shutra, isn't it too crude to call your sisters that?"

Chapter 203

Awareness #5

“Having three batteries is really reliable.”

“Shutra, isn’t it too crude to call your sisters that?”

Anastasia frowned at In-gong’s words. In fact, although it was a joke, he was almost serious.

She had felt it when she met In-gong the other day. In-gong seemed to care about Felicia a lot, but he also had a habit of eating his resources, including Felicia. Right now, Anastasia had used her magic until she was almost exhausted. Felicia had been with In-gong for a while, so she had already experienced this burn out several times.

After hearing Anastasia’s words, In-gong looked at her in surprise. Despite the content of her words being a complaint, Anastasia still sounded elegant.

“Well, it seems to be working.”

Carack spoke from where he was watching alone. Amita, who was more dissatisfied than Anastasia, cut into the conversation.

“Give Daphne the Heavenly Wine! This unscrupulous employer! You should guarantee a fair remuneration!”

Felicia, Anastasia, and Daphne were in charge of recovery for ‘faster than the wind’. Carack shook his head in disbelief at Amita.

“Raccoon, the Heavenly Wine is good, but why are you so obsessed with it?”

“There is nothing better than the Heavenly Wine!”

Amita jumped up and yelled, then they started to pant. They were excited just thinking about the Heavenly Wine.

“Umm... it won't last forever. This is why addiction is so terrible.”

Carack looked at Daphne for sympathy, and Daphne couldn't help smiling. It was at that moment that...

“Shutra, what is the Heavenly Wine?”

Anastasia tilted her head and asked. She couldn't follow the flow of the conversation because she didn't know what the Heavenly Wine was.

“Eh? Ah, yes. I never gave Anastasia noona the Heavenly Wine.”

It really seemed like that was the case. He thought he had given it to Anastasia because he had given it to everyone else, but it seemed like she had never even smelt it, let alone tasted it.

“Heavenly Wine? Isn't the name too grand?”

Anastasia said with a slight frown, inducing backlash from Amita.

“It is lacking! The Heavenly Wine is really amazing! You will be amazed after drinking it!”

“Hoh, isn't that intriguing?”

Anastasia said in a coy voice and looked at In-gong with slightly fluttering eyes. Instead of responding, In-gong thought about something else.

‘I can't just give it to her.’

Last night, he had drawn blood after using Spiritualism. Due to the activation of Pheromones and Divine Scent while dancing, they were infused into taste and smell of the wine, making it different from the previous Heavenly Wine. It was obvious that the effect would be great if he gave it to Anastasia without diluting it with alcohol or water. In-gong couldn't help smiling as he imagined Anastasia reacting like Amita. Then Carack frowned and said,

“Prince, you are thinking something dangerous. Your eyes are sneaky. They are

burning with more ambition than usual.”

In-gong had revealed too much. He quickly fixed his expression and spoke to Anastasia,

“Right now, I have none to spare. I will give it to you later.”

“Hrmm.”

Anastasia stared at In-gong. Her gaze showed that she knew something wasn’t right. In-gong nodded and grabbed Anastasia’s hand, kissing the back of it.

“Anastasia noona is a precious battery. I’ll make sure to give it to you at a later time.”

“Didn’t I just say that it is crude to call me that?”

Anastasia said, gazing at In-gong gracefully. She truly was very elegant.

“I want to help too.”

Caitlin sighed as she listened to the conversation. She could use spells, but they were only the basics. Unlike the expert magicians, Felicia and Anastasia, Caitlin was unable to use recovery magic. In-gong was about to say something to comfort Caitlin, but he managed to hold it back before committing the mistake. Caitlin was looking around at her surroundings with delighted eyes.

‘It’s okay, Noona is my aura battery.’

In-gong smiled at the thought, feeling that Anastasia’s words were somewhat reasonable. The three princesses weren’t batteries. In-gong didn’t think so even as a joke. He knew he shouldn’t think that way.

“Anyway... we are now approaching the limit line. Once beyond the limit line, we won’t be able to march like this.”

Anastasia changed the topic. Then Caitlin asked with shining eyes,

“Has Anastasia unni ever crossed over?”

Caitlin's voice was friendly, like they had become closer after the welcoming party. Anastasia responded with a gentle expression, like she didn't dislike Caitlin.

"I've only done it twice. But both times were only near the limit line. This is the first time that I will be entering the depths."

She sounded strangely more polite than when she talked to In-gong and Felicia. Anastasia continued to explain,

"Basically, it has rough terrain. Beyond the Northern Limit Line is pretty much just a cold land, so we will need to take some measures against the cold.

"There will also be creatures and barbarians... It won't be easy to reach Shutenberg's castle."

Chris, who had been silent until now, spoke up. He was training to become the next king of the lycanthropes, but he still felt afraid to go far beyond the limit line.

"It is a shame that there is a limit on the number of people who can board the Black Flame Dragon."

The number of soldiers led by the royal children reached nearly 200. That was over the limit for the Black Flame Dragon, so they needed to move on land. Anastasia looked up at the Black Flame Dragon and narrowed her eyes.

"Even if it was possible to fit them, riding it is impossible. There is severe turbulence beyond the Northern Limit Line, so it won't be able to fly as fast as before."

The altitude was likely to not be particularly high. Beyond the Northern Limit Line, the winds were as sharp as knives, so the sails of the Black Flame Dragon were likely to be damaged. They hadn't even reached the castle of Arch Lich Shutenberg, yet there were already ominous thoughts. Chris shrugged and said in a cool voice,

"Well, there are many magicians, and there are no ordinary people among the soldiers. Won't it be okay somehow?"

Along with the dark elves who had come from Sky Forest, the lycanthropes, the nightmares, and the suras, who had joined at Enger Plains, were all the best of their kind. In-gong's independent unit was unconventional and didn't contain anyone

ordinary either. There were many strong troops like the ogres and golems.

As the conversation continued, their voices naturally became louder. Then Felicia, who had been resting in a separate place, approached.

“What are you talking about?”

Felicia was currently taking a break, but she had been maintaining ‘faster than the wind’ for nearly two hours. She had laid down and rested as soon as the march stopped, but there was still fatigue on her face.

In-gong felt sorry toward her, while Anastasia just sighed. Chris watched from the side and laughed.

“I was telling Shutra that he is using Noonim too much.”

“Yes. Isn’t that right? He has drained his sisters.”

Felicia smiled wearily, while Caitlin laughed and looked at In-gong.

“Yes, yes. Shutra is too much. I’ve also had my aura drained.”

It was filled with affection rather than criticism. Then, instead of replying, In-gong stood up and declared,

“Now, let’s depart. Anastasia noonim, I’ll be asking for your magic power next.”

“Are you treating me as a battery now?”

“I am too.”

“How childish.”

However, the princesses then burst out laughing at In-gong’s expression.

“Yes, let’s start.”

As Anastasia moved to the center of the army, the aide beside her signalled for the soldiers to prepare to move. In-gong climbed on top of Maybach and thought about

Shutenberg.

It had always been Warrior Locke who took out Shutenberg in Knight Saga. Additionally, the place where Shutenberg had fallen wasn't beyond the Northern Limit Line, but at the border with the Demon World and Human World.

'I think that Locke probably took down a clone.'

In-gong took a deep breath and looked beyond the Northern Limit Line with a serious expression in his eyes.

Locke's party arrived at that location almost half an hour after In-gong's party left. Carlov gazed at the trail of the army and huffed.

"How can an army march so fast? Are they overflowing with magic power? No, isn't this too much even if they are?"

The speed of the army was even faster than the flying ship. There were 200 troops, but they were moving at a super fast speed. Carlov had experience marching through countless battlefields, so he was confused.

However, Beatrice was worried about something else.

"Doesn't it seem like they have no luggage? How are they getting their supplies?"

They could supplement their supplies in the Demon World, but the destination was beyond the limit line. Each soldier would need to carry a large burden, but the baggage for each soldier was too light. It was almost like they were carrying nothing.

Carlov's and Beatrice's worries deepened. They travelled all over the Demon World, but they had never encountered such an unusual maneuver.

"Well, aren't we able to go unnoticed thanks to that?"

Locke said brightly, but Carlov wasn't cheered up.

"Rather, I am worried that we will miss them."

Their movement speed was too fast. Until now, it had been easy to catch up due to the traces left behind. However, these traces might disappear beyond the limit line.

“Beyond the limit line, we will have to narrow the distance a little further.”

Locke’s group hadn’t moved beyond the limit line yet. Compared to the children of the demon king, they were lacking in information.

“Shouldn’t we just join with the children of the demon king? Their purpose is the same as ours.”

Carlov scratched his chin as he spoke, but Locke shook his head.

“It isn’t easy to decide. The Guardian told me to maintain a distance.”

Guardian Queian didn’t trust Conquest. Although Locke wondered if he needed to be so careful, he would follow Queian’s words for now.

“Anyway, let’s depart. Otherwise, we really will miss them.”

Carlov said lightly. The children of the demon king had likely already reached the Northern Limit Line at this speed.

“Beatrice, please use recovery.”

“Yes, Locke.”

Beatrice was Locke’s battery. She closed her eyes and prayed quietly to her god.

In-gong’s group reached the Northern Limit Line. In pursuit of In-gong’s party, Locke’s party headed toward the Northern Limit Line. Additionally, there were those who were going beyond the Northern Limit Line but toward the west.

“1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros greets the sword duke.”

“2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros greets the sword duke.”

“Greetings, I am the saintess, Zephyr’s fiancée!”

A youthful voice was added at the end. Baikal laughed, while Zephyr just closed his eyes with a bitter smile.

The sword duke couldn’t help laughing. He knew about the Dark Saintess, but he had never imagined she would have such a bright personality. Furthermore, he didn’t know she was the 2nd Prince’s fiancée.

“I am Sword Duke Ishgard. It is a pleasure to see 1st Prince and 2nd Prince.”

In response to the sword duke, Baikal smiled mildly while Zephyr opened his eyes. Altesia grinned as she approached Zephyr.

The sword duke looked at the three people before turning his gaze away. In addition to the Order of Erebus knights Altesia had brought along, there were the draconians led by Baikal and Zephyr respectively. However, the most prominent one was Quanta.

She looked like a gandharva, but the sword duke immediately identified her as a dragon. 2nd Prince was just as amazing as 9th Prince.

Quanta wasn’t the same as when she met Altesia, but just like before, she was still blindfolded.

The sword duke looked at Quanta with interest before turning his attention back to the three people.

“The preparations are ready. Then there is no need to delay. Let’s depart immediately.”

The number of troops led by Baikal and Zephyr combined to make 500. Due to them being cavalry, the amount of supplies needed was enormous. Therefore, in terms of mobility, they had to hurry or they would lag behind In-gong’s party.

The sword duke glided smoothly along the ground, immediately followed by Baikal and Zephyr.

Half a day later, aside from Victor, all the demon king’s children and Warrior Locke crossed the limit line.

In different places, the War Knight and the Death Knight looked at the same place.

Chapter 204

Storm

The legend of the elder dragons, who were said to have the same power as a god, was handed down in various places throughout the Demon World. The species with the longest historical record among the various species of the Demon World were the dark elves, but the elder dragons were even older than the dark elves.

The elder dragons had existed throughout the history of the Demon World. This meant there were many legends about them, especially from the Era of Struggle. The reason for this was very simple.

The Era of Struggle had been a horrible era in which all the species of the Demon World fought against each other, resulting in death and killing every day. In the days when the cruelties of war couldn't be escaped, only the areas ruled by the elder dragons had escaped from the battles.

The absolute power of the elder dragons had not allowed any conflicts in their territory. There had been some groups foolish enough to challenge the elder dragons, but their fates had always been the same. Even among the dragons, who were called the best species, the elder dragons were special. They were dragons with the power of gods.

In the myths and legends, each of the elder dragons were given their own image.

Ainkel had the power of life and was the benevolent mother of Enger Plains. She gave peace to the people who entered her territory. In all the records, she had been painted as a saintess.

Enkidu was a tyrant with the power of destruction. However, ironically, due to his violence, Enkidu's territory was more peaceful than the territory of any other elder dragon. Even the strongest species wouldn't dare to boast in Enkidu's territory. If Ainkel was a mother, then Enkidu was a father.

Recorder Torres was portrayed as an inquisitive scholar and Violent Kaltein a silent

warrior. Although the Cruel Talia was portrayed as a youthful girl, she was considered 'cruel' for her ability to wipe out whole groups with a smile on her face.

Guardian Queian always appeared as a sage in the stories. He wasn't benign like Ainkel nor was he cruel like Talia. Unlike Torres, Queian often got involved because of his curiosity. However, he wasn't as violent as Enkidu, nor could he stay silent like Kaltein.

The last appearance of the elder dragons had been around 1,000 years ago. Since then, no one had spotted the elder dragons in the Demon World.

The Great Enkidu had lived for thousands of years. He had been born after the first elder dragons had already been annihilated by the red dragon. From the time he had been born, he had known what his role was and who his enemies were.

The elder dragon had the same power as a god, but he was no longer the same as he had been in the past. He had changed exactly 1,000 years ago.

Enkidu thought as he lay down in lava.

The Four Riders of the Apocalypse and the elder dragons couldn't intervene in the world in the same way as before. Moreover, both sides had just woken up from a very deep sleep.

However, the story was already continuing on without Enkidu's intervention. The indirect conflicts were then repeated, and the Great Enkidu acknowledged that the flow of destiny was accelerating due to these conflicts.

The Great Enkidu was patient. He had a hunch about his role in this torrent of destiny and instinctively felt that the moment when he would need to perform his role was just around the corner.

Enkidu sighed, with a fragment of Ainkel's broken soul remaining by his side.

A frigid cold...

The entire world seemed to be coated in white. A blizzard was in motion, and the wind was like a knife. The harsh cold caused their breaths to freeze. It had been fine after just crossing the limit line. The cold was worse, but the wind was at a fairly bearable level. A group of casios attacked them, but they weren't a big threat.

However, hell started once a day passed after crossing the limit line.

In-gong was reminded of the documentaries he had watched of Mount Everest. They were obviously walking through the plains, but it was hard to breathe like they were in a high mountain area. The thick snow made it difficult to move, and the blowing winds couldn't be blocked by their collars.

Silvan had tearfully given up the Black Flame Dragon. Of course, that didn't mean it had been left behind at the limit line. A minimal number of people had been left to run the Black Flame Dragon, and it headed back to Enger Plains.

All of those present were wearing winter clothes made of casios leather. The previous big battle at Enger Plains meant it wasn't difficult to produce clothes for 200 people. However, there was a limit to how much they could protect their bodies using the winter clothes and tools.

"Magic! Create a fire with magic! Do it!"

Amita cried out from their position on Carack's back. Despite the winter clothing, Amita's tail still flinched from the cold. Amita's words weren't for Carack but the children of the demon king at the front. Felicia, who was walking the closest to them, nodded, but she couldn't look back.

"Can't! Blow out, everything!"

Her lips didn't move well because of the cold, so her pronunciation was weird. However, the meaning was understood. The wind and cold were so strong that it was hard to even use fire magic. Even if she did create a fire, it would blow out in a few seconds.

"Bell Fire! Bell Fire!"

Amita exclaimed as they buried their face in Carack's back. Although their pronunciation was off, they seemed to be requesting for Hellfire. Felicia pretended not

to hear it. She couldn't waste her magic power beyond the limit line where anything could happen at any time.

"Hah... ha..."

Her footsteps were too heavy because of the snow. She was wearing large coloured goggles to protect her eyes from the light reflecting off the snow.

She felt like she was going to die. It was difficult to breathe, and she couldn't see well because of the colours goggles. If there wasn't a rope tied around her waist, then Felicia would've missed the person in front of her.

Due to the thick winter clothing she wore, Felicia wriggled and lost her footing. Normally, she would've screamed, but it didn't emerge this time. The good news was that Felicia didn't fall because there was a hand supporting her waist.

"Are you okay?"

It was In-gong, who often looked back while walking. Unlike the others, his pronunciation was fine, and he didn't seem tired at all. Felicia leaned against In-gong's firm arm clad in a thick winter coat.

"P-Pleasant. Isn't Shutra cold?"

"Yes."

In-gong said, laughing awkwardly. In fact, In-gong didn't feel any cold right now. His was a body which didn't feel the cold, heat, or any poisons.

'Indeed, Protagonist Body.'

However, if In-gong said that he didn't feel the cold, then he didn't know what resentment would be poured towards him.

"Shutra, sustain..."

Caitlin said with admiration from where she was walking, not far from Felicia. Her stamina was high, but her words couldn't help being affected by the cold.

Felicia took a few breaths and tried to leave In-gong's arms to walk, but it wasn't easy. She had already lost strength in her legs. In-gong supported Felicia's waist and asked,

"Do you want a ride?"

Normally, Felicia would've refused, but not this time. She nodded instantly. However, just as In-gong was about to raise Felicia to his back... There was a banging sound from the side. When he turned his head, he saw a red light which acted as a signal in the snow.

"I'll be back!"

In-gong left Felicia to Caitlin and activated Wind Style. He glided over the snow as he heard a loud roar.

"Yeti!"

The yeti, which looked like giant gorillas with white fur, were attacking the rear of the party. There were only a few yetis attacking 200 people, but the party's combat power had fallen greatly due to the frigid conditions. It was a situation where the number of victims could be unimaginable.

"Kuooh!"

However, he didn't need to worry. By the time In-gong arrived, Vandal was already attacking the last of the yetis. In-gong quickly used White Eagle and Black Eagle to help and asked Vandal,

"Vandal, are you okay?"

"I'm okay, though I moved a little wildly due to the cold."

Vandal smiled after smashing the yetis in a flash. In-gong sighed with relief and placed the bodies of the yetis in his inventory. The peeled off fat could be used for a fire and the meat could be eaten, so the corpses would be useful somewhere.

"Be careful not to sweat."

In-gong wondered if it was possible to sweat in this cold weather, but the sweat would

be impossible to stop once it started.

After half a day, the party decided to seek refuge from the cold in a large cave where frost giants resided. Thanks to the help of the Giant King's Sword, they were able to establish a friendly relationship without any bloodshed.

As soon as they entered the cave, Felicia and Anastasia used magic and spirits to block the entrance of the cave. Although small air holes were present, it was enough to stop the cold. Amita sang in front of a large fire ignited with the help of the last flame. The divine power in the green flame could be felt by In-gong's divinity.

As the air in the cave warmed up, the environment became more tolerable. Moreover, the 200 people had to stick close to each other, so the heat could be felt.

'I'm glad I found this cave.'

In-gong sighed with relief as he closed his mini-map. In this cold weather, he wouldn't have been able to relax if they needed to sleep in tents out in the cold.

"Hah... huh... Prince, is the area beyond the limit line always like this? I suddenly feel a great respect for the barbarians."

Carack asked after catching his breath. As In-gong took out food from his inventory, he agreed,

"I guess."

It was why the western and eastern barbarians always attacked the limit line. However, Anastasia shook her head as she heard their conversation.

"It isn't always like this beyond the limit line. The east and west is more livable than this. And... this frigid zone won't last long."

"Is that just your wish?"

Anastasia stayed silent at Carack's question. However, it really was the case. Everybody's moods darkened. If this cold persisted, they would be wiped out before even reaching Shutenberg.

However, fortunately, there was still some hope.

“Don’t worry too much. Princess’ words are correct.”

“Indara?”

It was Indara, who was the head of the sura warriors and served as a guide. He reassured them with a confident expression.

“In around three or four days, the cold will weaken. But... the attack of the creatures will intensify from that point forward.”

“I would rather fight.”

Carack answered, and everyone laughed in agreement.

“The Demon World is really good.”

Someone muttered suddenly, and In-gong agreed. Compared to beyond the limit line, the Demon World was really decent. There were some cases of wastelands like Evian, but the vast majority of the Demon World were areas with livable temperatures and land where crops could be grown. After tasting the terrible environment beyond the limit line, everyone nodded while Indara shrugged.

“It is a legend but originally the Demon World was a very difficult land to live in. It was similar to beyond the limit line.”

“What are you talking about? There was a legend like that?”

Felicia, who sounded like a dying chicken, asked with curiosity. Anastasia laughed at Felicia but instantly sat down next to her and used recovery magic. Indara took a deep breath before turning to In-gong and asking,

“Your Highness, do you know the legend of the Red Dragon?”

Chapter 205

Storm #2

“The legend of the red dragon?”

It was Anastasia, not In-gong, who asked. It was apparently a completely new story for her.

Felicia gazed at In-gong from her position next to Anastasia. Similarly, In-gong also looked at Felicia, and the two exchanged glances. They didn't use any message magic as their eyes were sufficient to communicate the message. In-gong gave a small nod, and Felicia responded with a similar nod.

Indara gazed at Anastasia and Felicia, then he opened his mouth slowly.

“Yes, Your Highness. According to legend, the red dragon destroyed all civilizations in the distant past before the Era of Struggle. He was a type of destruction god.”

Although he had the power of a god, he hadn't been a being who walked alongside the gods. Every species had their own myths and legends.

The destruction and creation of the world appeared in many myths and legends. The concept of a destruction god wasn't anything new. However, Anastasia was confused by Indara's story because there was something strange.

“The destruction of civilization? Not the world?”

“Yes, the red dragon confronted the elder dragons of that time and both sides were destroyed after a bloody battle. In the process, the civilizations which had been shining brilliantly in the Demon World were destroyed.”

In-gong and Felicia's gazes met once again. Apart from them, the other children of the demon king showed interest in Indara's story.

Chris, Caitlin, and Silvan were staring with fascinated expressions, but Anastasia

frowned. Although she didn't know as much as Felicia, Anastasia was an excellent magician and knew a lot of ancient knowledge. She frowned because she was reminded of the existence of the indigenous species.

The cave they were in was big enough to accommodate 200 people at once, but it was still a sealed place. Indara didn't speak in a loud voice, however, everyone in the cave had no problem hearing his story.

"As a result of the battle which shook the heavens and earth, the magic flow of the whole Demon World became a mess, and it became a land that suffered from abnormal weather, just like beyond the limit line here. After many years of effort put forth by many people, the Demon World managed to recover and become a place where people can live, but it is hard beyond the limit line because this area still hasn't recovered."

Indara said slowly before catching his breath. Anastasia looked up as she thought about this story.

"Hrmm, this seems to be the first time I've heard this story. Felicia, have you ever heard it?"

Felicia was the best when it came to ancient knowledge. As all eyes focused on her, Felicia shrugged and replied,

"I've heard a similar story. When I went to Curtis, I heard the legend about a red serpent god from the giants."

The reason for her exchange of gazes with In-gong was to discuss whether they should tell this story.

"The giants?"

Anastasia's eyes widened as she asked again. Felicia nodded before gazing at Indara.

"The lizardmen told a story that was similar to Indara's. They... they said that they were a species created by the indigenous species in order to fight against the red serpent god."

"Indigenous species... they really exist..."

It was more of a statement than a question. Anastasia frowned and thought deeply before asking Indara,

“Indara, is this a sura legend?”

“Yes, Your Highness. The story has been handed down among the suras.”

Indara responded with an aloof expression. Unlike the Sanctuary, this wasn’t a secret.

‘Indeed, it would be surprising if this story was a secret.’

The fact that the Four Riders of the Apocalypse and Drakon Kechatulla didn’t appear in the story meant that it was quite simplified.

“That... can I ask you one thing?”

Carack asked, raising his hand abruptly. Indara didn’t think that an orc would ask a question instead of the royal children, so he was confused for a moment.

“Feel free to ask.”

Carack was In-gong’s aide, so Indara didn’t object as he was basically a person from outside the Demon King’s Palace. Carack’s eyes shook as he spoke,

“You said that people worked to help the Demon World recover? Are those people the guardians?”

“Are you talking about how the lands became devastated after the guardians disappeared?”

It was Chris who had remained silent until now. Carack nodded straight away.

“Yes.”

It was the reason why the children of the demon king were being dispatched to several places around the Demon World. The lands which had lost their guardians had become deserts and were now uninhabitable. This mainly took place on the borders, but it happened in so many places that it was a well known story in the Demon World. Indara nodded like he had also heard about it.

“It is possible.”

“Enger Plains.”

Felicia said suddenly. As everyone’s eyes gathered on her, Felicia took a breath and chanted a spell. Then a large and translucent sphere covered the place where the children of the demon king were sitting. It was a magic shield which was used to block sounds from leaking.

As Felicia opened the shield, everyone’s eyes sharpened. Felicia looked at In-gong and said,

“Shutra, isn’t that the reason we fought to protect Green Wind on Enger Plains? If Green Wind or the small temple was destroyed, then Enger Plains will lose its greenery.”

Only Felicia had been with In-gong at Enger Plains, even though she hadn’t participated in the fight to protect Green Wind and the small temple. However, it wasn’t important whether she fought or not. They quickly understood what Felicia was talking about.

“If this story explains the ultimate goal of the group with the purple aura that is attacking the Demon World... do they want to turn the Demon World into an area like the limit line?”

Chris growled ferociously as he spoke.

It made sense. All of the demon king’s children, except for Felicia, didn’t know everything about the Four Knights of the Apocalypse. If the whole Demon World became like beyond the limit line, then their goal could be achieved to a certain extent.

‘But...’

In-gong couldn’t help feeling like something was lacking. If that was the purpose of the Death Knight and War Knight, then they should’ve attacked the guardians more extensively.

“Does Green Wind know anything else?”

Felicia asked In-gong, who shook his head. In-gong had already talked to Green Wind about this a few times. In-gong asked Indara instead,

“Indara, do you know anything else?”

“The story about the red dragon is rarely passed down. But the sword duke... I’m not sure but he might know a little bit more.”

Indara replied solemnly since this was the first time he had heard about Enger Plains. Anastasia focused on Indara and said,

“It is worth checking out, Indara. It was a good story.”

“Thank you, Your Highness.”

Once it was all over, Felicia took down the anti-eavesdropping shield. The reason for opening the shield in the first place was due to the part about Enger Plains losing its greenery if the small temple disappeared. If this information spread, something big could happen in Enger Plains.

Once the shield disappeared, the people in the vicinity wondered about what was spoken, but they didn’t say anything. It was the royal family who opened the shield, so they didn’t think too deeply about what had been spoken.

They consumed dry meat and hot water from In-gong’s inventory before falling into a deep sleep against each other. Even the ogres prioritized sleep over the meal, indicating how harsh today’s march was.

Felicia, who didn’t have the stamina of an ogre, also tried to fall asleep, but it wasn’t easy. Anastasia leaned against Felicia in her thick winter clothes and asked,

“Felicia, did you explore the ruin in Curtis with Shutra?”

Felicia responded in a small voice,

“Yes, we went to the holy place of the lizardmen.”

The lizardmen hadn’t told them not to talk about visiting the temple. Anastasia

laughed and leaned against Felicia even more.

“That must have been good.”

Anastasia was just thinking about how much Felicia loved ruins, but Felicia’s reaction was amusing.

“Eh? Yes. G-Good. T-That... we were also with Carack and Delia. The two of us were hardly ever alone. Oh, but the fireworks were good.”

Anastasia’s eyes lit up at the unexpected babbling. Why was Felicia responding like this? Additionally, the center of the story was In-gong, not the ruin.

“Felicia?”

“Huh?”

“Your reaction is a little... Isn’t it unusual?”

Anastasia asked, and Felicia swallowed hard. Suddenly, she regained her spirit.

“Ah, no. It’s just...”

Felicia trailed off, avoiding Anastasia’s eyes. Then Carack raised a hand to In-gong’s shoulder, who was sitting not far away and listening to their conversation.

“Prince, laughing will make her feel worse.”

“Hmm, hmm.”

In-gong tried to fix his expression, but he couldn’t help smiling. Felicia’s reaction was very cute, but something was tickling at a corner of his heart.

‘Ah, it is embarrassing.’

In-gong recalled Caitlin’s and Felicia’s reactions on the day his birth secret had been revealed, and his smile grew wider. This truly was very sweet. Carack looked at In-gong and clicked his tongue. At that time, Anastasia shifted her suspicious eyes from Felicia to In-gong.

“Shutra, what have you done to Felicia? What have you done since then?”

“Unni!”

It was almost the same question as 3rd Queen Sylvia’s. As Felicia and In-gong remained silent, Anastasia’s suspicions grew even more. Then Caitlin, who was watching the conversation, sat down beside In-gong and said in a small voice,

“I also want to watch the fireworks with Shutra.”

The way she moved her fingers while saying it was also very cute. While In-gong was suffering an attack once again, Chris laughed and raised a hand to Caitlin’s shoulder.

“Caitlin, once we return, I will prepare a big fireworks display.”

“Really?”

“Really.”

Chris smiled very gently. His smile was more like a father than a brother.

“Oppa is the best!”

Unlike Felicia and Anastasia who had used up all their stamina, Caitlin was still energetic. She smiled widely at Chris, painting a really warm scene. However, someone else was watching Caitlin and Chris with jealousy instead of warmth.

“Felicia! This Oppa as well!”

“Ah, come on!”

However, Felicia didn’t have any stamina to fend off Silvan. So, she was forced to stay in Silvan’s arms. Anastasia stared at Felician and Silvan, and then at Chris and Caitlin. A bitter smile appeared on her face. She thought it was unsightly, yet she was also filled with envy.

While everyone else was resting, the royal children were making a fuss, and it was the aides who ended up suffering. Carack, with the help of Delia, Seira, Sepira, and

Chandra, managed to restrain the royal children, and the atmosphere soon quieted down.

“Everything is good, so do you have to sleep like this?”

It would be nice if he was next to Felicia and Caitlin. As In-gong spoke, Carack replied with a sour expression from next to him,

“Prince, I also want to sleep next to Seira, Delia, and Karma again.”

It wasn't just one person... and he said 'again'.

In-gong was just glad that Carack hadn't mentioned Daphne or Sepira.

“Now, Prince, come this way. Prince smells really good. I will help get rid of the cold.”

Carack laughed with a really creepy expression. Despite knowing that he was joking, In-gong couldn't help shuddering. After Carack laughed one last time, the cave fell silent.

Some time passed by, and In-gong woke up abruptly from a deep sleep. Aside from Amita's flames, the inside of the cave was still dark, and everyone's breathing was calm. From the entrance of the cave, the sound of wind could be heard through the small holes in the magic shield.

It was the same as before he had fallen asleep, but In-gong felt goose bumps. While everyone was sleeping, In-gong looked up at the ceiling.

He could feel a vibration, and tiny flakes of rock were falling from the ceiling. The moment In-gong took a deep breath, the vibration was amplified. Then he felt a sudden change. In-gong shot up from his spot, and Carack opened his eyes.

The vibration became bigger, and large debris began to fall. Suddenly, In-gong shouted.

Kwang!

With a loud roar, cracking sounds rang out all over the ceilings and walls.

It was at this moment that the cave collapsed with one final roar as rocks, snow, and

water poured down from the sky on to top of everyone's heads.

Chapter 206

Storm #3

The ceiling of the cave was high, while the frost giants had an average height of eight meters. The difference was very short, but it caused a gap. Even that short amount of time was precious for In-gong.

He was already facing the ceiling. So, as Amita's flames illuminated the falling rocks, In-gong used Telekinesis. The power stretched out over everyone's heads, and the falling rocks were caught in the air.

It was three or four seconds, but that time was enough to save everyone's lives.

"Kuraha!"

Carack let out a battle cry. The people, who hadn't woken when the ceiling began to collapse, opened their eyes at his call, and they quickly regained their spirits. In-gong stopped using Telekinesis, then the rocks started falling again. Almost everyone who had woken up reacted to it.

Kwakakakang!

Vandal, the ogres, and the golems aimed their fists at the ceiling. The sura moved their swords quickly, while the dark elves randomly fired off magic power.

The large rocks were broken and split into small stones. Simultaneously, the lycanthropes used Beast Form and embraced the other species in order to act as a shield against the fragments.

The shock continued. Sharp shards stuck into the backs of the lycanthropes while the ground shook as large debris crashed down. However, in the midst of all this, there was a sharp scream. Felicia, who had been in Anastasia and Silvan's arms, sighed with relief as the ceiling stopped collapsing.

However, there was no time to rest. As soon as the cave collapsed, the cold entered.

Moreover, there were things pouring down from the sky which couldn't be smashed like the rocks.

Hwakak!

It was an understatement to call it a heavy rain; it was like large water buckets were pouring down on them from the sky. For a moment, everybody didn't breathe. It was hard to even open their eyes due to the sudden rain.

After a few more seconds, the rain was over. Water had poured down from a high place, but no one was injured. At most, some people swallowed the water, but that was fine because it wasn't mixed with poison.

However, there was a different problem. They were in a place beyond the limit line—a fearsome frigid land.

Everybody grabbed their chest, which filled with a cold air that seemed to freeze their lungs. The bigger issue was that their whole body was wet. The wind, which seemed to cut at their flesh, threatened their lives.

The lycanthropes, whose clothes were torn, were knocked down first due to their transformed bodies. Their wet fur quickly froze, and the body temperature of the lycanthropes lowered sharply.

The blizzard entered into the cave. The muddy floor froze over, and the dark elves, crushed by the weight of the lycanthropes, could barely breathe.

Vandal couldn't make a decision. He was a senior general of the Demon King's Palace. However, this was the first time he had encountered a battlefield like this, so he couldn't decide if it was better to take off the wet clothes or to just wear it.

His body was heavy, and the white blizzard darkened his field of view.

Anastasia trembled. The moment she saw the falling rocks, she had covered Felicia's head without thinking. Thanks to the fact that she and Silvan had done it at the same time, Felicia wasn't injured by the rocks, but the problem was the water and the cold. Anastasia's long and beautiful eyelashes were now frozen.

Felicia gasped from underneath Anastasia and Silvan. As she lay underneath them, she

gazed at the blizzard in the sky and saw a magic spell. It was clear that the water, which had poured down from nowhere, was due to transformation magic.

She exhaled. It wasn't enough to produce a breath of white mist, but the breath coming from her throat seemed to freeze. Despite this, she was activating her magic power, so her spirit felt better. It was an extremely dangerous situation. If her body temperature kept lowering like this, she would die before even fighting.

Felicia tried desperately to move her lips. Anastasia was also reciting a spell.

They had to block the wind and snowstorm somehow. The next thing was to create heat to increase their body temperature again. However, the one who poured the water on them didn't give them this time. From the sky, death poured down directly. They were icicles as sharp as knives.

In-gong got up from the ground and shouted as he pulled the Giant King's Sword from his inventory.

"Green Wind!"

It wasn't a simple call but an order for an upgrade. In-gong used Telekinesis to rotate the Giant King's Sword fiercely, and it destroyed the icicles. Meanwhile, Green Wind appeared as the goddess of wind behind In-gong, sharing her consciousness with him as she used her wind.

Chukwakakakak!

The fragments of the shattered icicles were pushed back up in the sky, and they glistened like stars.

"Kuha!"

In-gong's breath poured out. Protagonist Body increased his resistance to the cold, but he wasn't immune to it. As the cold seemed to penetrate deep into his lungs, In-gong gazed up at the sky. In the center of the magic blizzard, he saw a woman.

It was the first time he had seen her, but In-gong knew who she was. It was Frost Queen Yosarina, a close confidant of Arch Lich Shutenberg. She was a powerful magician who could use various ice spells while wearing thick ice armour around her

body. The presence of one of Shutenberg's swords meant that this attack wasn't a coincidence.

Shutenberg had already noticed the march of In-gong's group and had dispatched Frost Queen Yosarina to this cold land in order to stop In-gong's party. Chris had talked about a diversion attack, while the sword duke had said that both groups were important.

The Frost Queen Yosarina had moved, so both of them were correct.

In-gong had been too distracted by the cold. Shutenberg didn't rule over the whole area beyond the limit line, so In-gong had thought the snowstorm would cover their march. However, this was a mistake; the party was already in Shutenberg's area.

Yosarina raised her hand in the sky. The armour around her made the frost queen look like a five-meter-tall giant.

A new sound was heard over the wind. It was a low and scary cry, followed by numerous heavy footsteps pounding against the ground.

Green Wind, who maintained the barrier of wind, looked around with an uneasy expression. The sounds were coming from beyond the blizzard. Those who encircled the cave were advancing little by little.

Ice golems, crazy ice spirits, undead yeti and frost giants... Yosarina's ice corps numbered in the hundreds, maybe even thousands. In-gong opened the mini-map reflexively and saw that it was filled with red dots.

Someone needed to fight. The 200 elites In-gong led weren't capable of fighting right now. He had to earn time until they could fight again.

Yosarina raised her hand again and started drawing a new magic circle at her fingertips. In-gong had to stop Yosarina.

"Spiritualism!"

He cried out, and power filled him. Yosarina paused while making the magic circle and looked at In-gong for a moment. In-gong used Wind Style to move forward, while simultaneously, he shouted again,

“Caitlin!”

It was a choice he made in that moment. The light of Conquest wound around Caitlin who was in Chris’ arms, and she cried out angrily from inside the white light. Caitlin was receiving an upgrade to an apostle.

In-gong didn’t look back as he rushed at Yosarina. The crazy ice spirits floating around Yosarina headed towards In-gong, and Yosarina started casting her magic faster.

The frost corps surrounding the party sped up. There were even those who started running.

The floor rang out with loud thuds. Carack gave a battle cry, while Vandal and the ogres lifted their weapons. The dark elves used magic to heal the lycanthropes desperately, while the sura moaned painfully as they raised their swords.

Felicia’s and Anastasia’s spells completed at the same time. A barrier of fire surrounded the party while the magic of recovery covered everyone.

Caitlin raised her head and revealed fangs through blue hair. Her eyes were reminiscent of an extremely wild beast hunting its prey.

The Fire Barrier weakened, and In-gong shattered the ice spirits. Then White Eagle struck Yosarina’s armour. Part of her armour broke, but Yosarina didn’t stop moving her hand.

Her magic circle was now complete, and In-gong prepared for water pouring on him again. However, this magic was different from the first one.

Fire Barrier turned off. Then Yosarina looked at the party and not at In-gong. The lycanthropes sensed it, and they quickly grabbed the dark elves near them. Caitlin grabbed Felicia and Anastasia, while Chris cursed.

An ominous sound rang out from the ground. Felicia and Anastasia turned white as they looked at the ground.

Kwakakakang!

The ground broke apart. There was a loud vibration as a giant monster emerged from the ground. It was a frost worm covered with sharp thorns. Its body length was dozens of meters and its head was large enough to swallow a few people.

Dozens of people were caught when the frost worm rose up. Many more fell to the ground.

The cold hit everyone again, and the frost corps finally arrived just before the party.

The frost worm shook. The weight of its body striking the ground was enough to cause damage. There were those who couldn't escape and were crushed, while others fell again due to the shaking of the ground. Simultaneously, some others were attacked by the frost corps.

Yosarina burst out laughing. It seemed like her laughter made the blizzard even stronger.

They needed a solution. In-gong needed to break through this situation.

He focused his thoughts, and the fire received from the last flame covered his whole body. In-gong needed to leave the frost worm and frost corps to those on the ground, and concentrate only on Yosarina. Only then would they be able to overcome this situation.

Then at that very moment...

In-gong felt an unbearable impulse to look behind him. Beyond the red dots on the mini-map, someone was rushing there.

Chapter 207

Storm #4

It was still far off into the distance. This was the first time In-gong had felt that energy. However, it felt familiar to him. He could naturally recall the names of those approaching from afar at a terrific pace.

Kwang!

The ground split again as the frost worm hit the ground with its huge body once more. It was like a giant tower crashing down. Once again, there were those who couldn't escape. Their bodies and blood froze instantly after becoming injured.

However, because of his senses, honed through many battlefields, Vandal didn't look back. Instead of heading towards the frost worm, he rushed towards the frost corps. The independent army he had trained did the same, and the battlefield itself widened.

"G-General Vandal?"

"Stay close behind me!"

Vandal said to Nayatra, who was clinging to his back, causing her to form two fists. He rushed like a tank towards the frost corps and zombies, smashing into them and making the battlefield wider.

The center of the battle moved away from the frost worm. Then Nayatra used secondary magic from behind Vandal, while he watched the front. He had a hunch that something would happen in the rear.

He wouldn't be the one dealing with the frost worm. There were separate people assigned to that role.

The blizzard was strong. After pushing out from the ground, the frost worm once again straightened its body.

Chris cursed inwardly and roared loudly. His command, which spread clearly though the snowstorm, was in line with Vandal's behaviour. It was a command to rush to the frost corps instead of the frost worm. Immediately after giving the command, Chris turned around. Just like Vandal, his role wasn't to deal with the frost worm. He didn't say anything and simply turned around, exchanging a gaze with someone.

Silvan stared at the frost worm. His open fairy glowed golden, and a strong magic power was surrounding Amita's sword. It was clear that the power seemed to be under control.

"Chris!"

Felicia shouted. Rather than responding, Chris nodded to Caitlin, who was standing near Felicia and Anastasia. Caitlin understood immediately and sprang forward with an angry growl.

"Let's go! Noonim!"

Chris grabbed Felicia's and Anastasia's waists and moved at a high speed. Anastasia gave a short scream. Although she wanted to grumble about his rough treatment, her lips were already moving to cast a spell. As Chris dug through the frost corps, Felicia's and Anastasia's magic swept through the frost corps. The three of them seemed like a moving turret.

"Silvan!"

Felicia shouted in the midst of the snowstorm. Her voice didn't have the power to break through the storm, but it reached him clearly. Silvan smiled as he shone with the light of the fairy and charged towards a frost worm.

Caitlin ran next to Silvan. This was the first time the two had fought closely on a battlefield. However, Caitlin and Silvan understood each other with their eyes. Both were trained warriors, so they could see what the other person wanted.

Caitlin outpaced Silvan. She turned hastily, brought both hands together and lowered her posture. Silvan leaped towards Caitlin's hands, and as soon as his feet touched her, Caitlin lifted Silvan up with all her strength.

Silvan flew forward. He broke through the snow and raised Amita's sword up high. The

frost worm's dozens of eyes turned toward him.

Chukwakakak!

Dozens of thorns, which had been covering the frost worm's body, flew toward Silvan. Instead of squatting, Silvan turned his body in the air. He swung Amita's sword around, and the magic power in the blade erased the thorns and blizzard at the same time.

Silvan took a deep breath and focused the magic power of the fairy on Amita's sword. Like when he fought the Famine Knight, lightning covered Amita's sword!

Kwakang!

The lightning tore through the blizzard, and Amita's sword pierced the body of the frost worm. Lightning bolts scattered all over the place and exploded continuously. Amita's sword, the lightning sword, split the body of the frost worm apart. The worm's thick outer skin was torn open and green blood burst out, causing it to shake and scream.

However, the speed in which it was attacked was faster. Silvan, who had created an enormous wound more than 10 meters wide, pulled the sword out. He kicked against the body of the frost worm and threw himself into the air before wielding his sword again.

A golden light extended from Amita's sword and struck the frost worm. The frost worm thrashed around and sprayed thorns at Silvan. As the frost worm's dozens of eyes stared at Silvan, its wounds grew wider and green blood continued to leak out.

Silvan took a deep breath again. It felt like his lungs were freezing from the cold, but his mind was clear. He changed his body position by somersaulting in the air while panting. At that moment, Caitlin moved between Silvan and the frost worm.

She was like a white meteor blazing through the sky. During the time in which Silvan had been injuring the frost worm, Caitlin had gathered a lot of aura and didn't hesitate to fly into the wound. Instead of closing her eyes against the sticky green fluid, she moved straight ahead, and the Starlight Core responded to the amplification of power from the apostle upgrade.

Caitlin didn't punch out. Instead, she exploded with a strong aura from all over her

body.

Kwang!

There was a loud roar, and the frost worm's body swelled up like a snake bloating after swallowing a large amount of food. That was the end of the frost worm. Without even a scream, the frost worm finally collapsed.

Silvan lowered the speed of his fall using magic power and settled on the ground at almost the same time as the frost worm. Caitlin, covered in a white light, emerged from the frost worm's wound. Her hair, soaring upwards like a flame, was impressive, but the sight of her torn winter clothes and the green fluid covering her body made Silvan sad.

However, Caitlin was used to being covered with the enemy's blood on the battlefield. So, she just looked toward the sky, where the battle between In-gong and Yosarina was in full swing.

Kwang! Kwang! Kwang!

There were several explosions, and the ice pieces scattered. Then Yosarina attacked In-gong with an ice storm. Huge ice blades made from magic were aimed at him from all directions. There were so many that In-gong would be torn into pieces if they struck. However, In-gong used his divinity to destroy all the ice blades and narrowed the distance to Yosarina. White Eagle, the Alpha and Beta Black Eagle, and the Giant King's Sword wandered around In-gong, crushing everything which headed toward him.

Finally, In-gong and Yosarina collided. Ice crawled over Yosarina and thickened the ice armour around her. She smiled as she endured the attacks of White Eagle, Black Eagle and the Giant King's Sword.

The frost queen's armour was invincible in the cold. As long as Yosarina was in this armour, she was safe. Moreover, she still had many things remaining which she had prepared.

Yosarina didn't think she could finish In-gong with the ice blades, but time was on her side. How long could those down below survive in this frigid cold? Every minute and second was precious as 9th Prince and his followers headed for their deaths.

However, Yosarina wasn't just buying time, and the reason why she didn't care about the death of the frost worm was clear.

The ground shook again. There were big cracks in several places of fighting, and frost worms extended their heads out of the ground. Then the ground quaked with wild tremors as though the frost worms wanted to wipe out all the frost corps as well as the troops In-gong led.

As screams of horror and death occurred all over the place, Nayatra closed her eyes tightly and buried her head into Vandal's neck. Felicia's lips were blue from the cold, while Silvan and Caitlin looked at each other.

Yosarina sat happily in her thick armour. She had expected In-gong to retreat to save his troops or not be able to concentrate due to worrying about the ground.

However, his reaction was neither one of those. Rather than looking at the ground, In-gong struck the frost queen's armour with the Giant King's Sword which was filled with a strong aura! A part of the armour split, and as the ice broke, cracks formed around the point which had been struck.

Yosarina panicked. Did the 9th Prince have the same mentality as 2nd Prince, unlike the information she received? Why didn't he look back once?

The reason was simple, and it wasn't because In-gong was cold-hearted.

They had finally arrived. On the mini-map, the purple dots, which meant neutrality, shone.

Silvan and Caitlin, who were rushing towards the frost worms, slowed down for some reason. Felicia and Anastasia stopped using magic and looked up at the sky blankly.

Then at that moment...

The blizzard stopped, and the wind subsided. There were no clouds in the clear sky. It was only for this battlefield, like a glass wall had been built up and the blizzard raged outside it.

This was climate manipulation... The power of divine magic. Only two people in the

world could use divine magic to this extent:

Dark Saintess Altesia, who received the favour of Erebos, the god of darkness; and Saintess Beatrice, who was called the incarnation of Mother Earth.

It wasn't Altesia. It was Beatrice. The gold cross in the clear sky showed this.

There was one more thing... One more fact which proved it was Beatrice!

A huge sword of light, made from amassed aura, pierced a frost worm. The name of the sword was the Warrior's Sword. It was something which only Warrior Locke could use. The sword of light exploded and scattered the aura. The frost worm fell with a shriek, and the Warrior's Sword crossed the air. It moved quickly past In-gong and struck Yosarina.

The upper part of the frost queen's armour was now broken. Yosarina screamed, and In-gong rose up into the air instead of following Yosarina or looking back.

Warrior Locke had appeared. In-gong didn't know why he was encountering Locke in a place like this, but Locke was a powerful ally. This was proven by the fact that he attacked Yosarina and the frost worm instead of In-gong and his companions.

Warrior Locke moved near In-gong, using the sword given by Guardian Queian to pressure Yosarina. Yosarina restored the ice armour hurriedly and shot out ice blades, but Locke faced them head on without retreating. Every time his sword flashed, dozens of ice blades were smashed.

'Master.'

Green Wind whispered from within White Eagle. In-gong understood the meaning of her short call. The climate manipulation was only temporary. No matter how great Beatrice's divine power was, it was unreasonable to completely remove the cold from this area.

In the cold, Yosarina's defense was beyond imagination. However, even without the cold, the armour could still survive the Warrior's Sword.

In-gong needed to knock Yosarina down before the climate manipulation was lifted. Once the cold returned, everyone with already lowered body temperatures wouldn't

be able to last much longer. Even In-gong was affected by the cold as he confronted Yosarina, and his stamina was already low.

Taking deep breaths, In-gong swallowed the cold air anyway as he concentrated on Earth Quaker. The fairy embedded in it started to emit a strong magic power in response to him. In-gong didn't stop there and squeezed out all the aura from his aura heart.

It wasn't the power which had destroyed the fairy king. This was now something else entirely. In-gong remembered the sun he had encountered in a ruin of the indigenous species. The power of divinity, aura, and magic power gathered together, and the image was realized through Dragon Words.

Those fighting on the ground looked up at the sky with no conscious reason. Then Felicia laughed like it was ridiculous, while Anastasia shook her head and muttered, 'Shutra.' Carack felt warm. Chris and Silvan forgot to fight, while Caitlin, who had been staring at the frost worms with fearsome eyes, cried out with a mixture of confusion and joy.

"A-Amazing."

Locke felt the warmth above his head as well. He laughed while cornering Yosarina, who looked up at the sky from within her armour and felt fearful.

The sun shone brightly in the sky. It was a 30-meter-wide mass of power which glowed with a white light.

In-gong formed a fist, and the white woman in his soul whispered. Green Wind embraced In-gong and delivered her strength. The sun was compressed, and the sphere became a large spear. As it emitted flames which were hotter than a furnace, In-gong manipulated it using Telekinesis.

Yosarina tried to escape, but Locke didn't allow it. He called several huge swords of light to stop her retreat and used divine magic to interfere with Yosarina's movements.

As Yosarina shrieked, the sun spear crossed the air. Yosarina moved her body to try and avoid the sun spear, but it was manipulated by Telekinesis. In response to Yosarina's movement, the tip of the sun spear shifted, and the gigantic mass of heat melted the frost armour, piercing Yosarina's chest!

There was no screaming. The spear pierced Yosarina's chest, and she took her last breath in the armour. With her emerald hair, she became a piece of ice, and the frost armour around her shattered and scattered.

[Your level has risen.]

In-gong closed his eyes and panted heavily. Although his stamina was restored, the sweat still remained on his body. However, In-gong didn't reveal his difficulties. He opened his eyes and gazed at the face in front of him.

"The Drakon Kechatulla created by the Demon World."

It was the face of Warrior Locke, a protagonist of Knight Saga. He was the new Drakon Kechatulla raised by Guardian Queian.

The owner of the Warrior's Sword held out his right hand as if he wanted In-gong to shake it.

Chapter 208

Storm #5

In Knight Saga, it wasn't until Year 514 that Warrior Locke went on his adventure. It was currently Year 513. So, according to Knight Saga, Locke was supposed to be staying at the temple right now.

It might have been due to In-gong, but many things had already changed from Knight Saga. Still, he had never thought he would encounter Locke in this place.

In Knight Saga, Locke was the mighty warrior who defended the Human World from the demon king's army. Due to that, In-gong hadn't thought of him as a possibly ally.

'The demon king's army hasn't invaded the Human World yet.'

Recorder Torres had said there was another Drakon Kechatulla. In-gong knew it the moment he saw Locke; In-gong could feel the strong aura of a dragon from Locke.

Moreover, Warrior Locke had called In-gong the Drakon Kechatulla of the Demon World. His gaze was filled with a strong curiosity rather than enmity, and he had a bright smile which was filled with confidence.

'I wonder if he is an ally.'

Locke had attacked Yosarina and not In-gong's party. Additionally, the climate manipulation magic was also being used for In-gong's party.

In-gong took a deep breath. He was too far away to shake hands, so he decided to respond in a similar manner to Locke.

In-gong greeted, "The Human World's Drakon Kechatulla."

Locke's eyes shone brilliantly, and his smile widened. It was at this moment that...

'Master! The fight hasn't ended yet!'

Green Wind cried out to In-gong. It was just as Green Wind said. Frost Queen Yosarina had been defeated, but there were still three frost worms and the frost corps. There was still a battle on the ground.

“Shall we clean this up first?”

“Indeed.”

It was Locke who spoke first. In-gong then responded as he gazed at the ground, and Locke drew his sword again. The two people crossed by each other like a promise had just been made. As In-gong flew toward the nearest frost worm, Green Wind whispered in his ears,

‘Master, I dislike that person.’

“Why?”

Did she feel something? She might have discovered something that In-gong hadn't. Green Wind went on to respond to In-gong's question with a slightly petulant voice. Although she wasn't in a solid state, In-gong could imagine clearly what Green Wind looked like as she spoke.

‘I just don't like him. He feels similar to Master. But Master is much greater.’

She didn't like him because he gave off a similar feeling to In-gong. Did she think he was like a fake? Anyway, he understood what Green Wind was talking about. They were both Drakon Kechatullas. Maybe there was more that they had in common.

“Anyway, let's hurry!”

‘I understand, Master.’

Green Wind hugged In-gong. With the strong wind blowing around him, In-gong flew into the mouth of a frost worm. He was going to imitate Caitlin's actions he had seen during the fight against Yosarina.

After swallowing In-gong, the frost worm wriggled and then swelled up like a balloon. Its skin was so durable that it didn't shatter, but that didn't matter. The internal organs

had exploded, so the frost worm slowly collapsed. In-gong flew out of the mouth of the frost worm as it fell. Thanks to the strong wind blowing around him, he managed to escape from the body of the frost worm without any blood on him.

Before shifting his gaze, In-gong instinctively shook his body. The attack had been an extreme way of consuming aura, but the time efficiency was obvious, so he planned to do it with the next frost worm. Fortunately, there was no need for In-gong to do so. Not far away from where he was, one of the frost worms swelled like a balloon before exploding. Silvan and Caitlin had taken care of another one in the same way.

“Prince!”

“Carack!”

It was Carack who ran up behind him. Carack had fought hard with a spear since his axe was frozen with liquid.

As Carack sighed with relief to see In-gong safe, In-gong checked the mini-map. Due to the death of a large number of frost corps and Yosarina, the battle was flowing in a favourable direction. Based on this scene, clean-up would be easy.

After confirming the safety of Anastasia and Chris, who weren't part of the King's Knights, In-gong ran toward the newly defeated frost worm. Unlike In-gong, Caitlin exited from a wound in the stomach which was around 10 meters long.

“Shutra.”

Caitlin laughed when she saw In-gong. However, unlike In-gong, Caitlin didn't have Green Wind, so her body was covered with green fluids. At the moment in which her aura had exploded, her winter clothes had already been extremely damaged.

“Noona, are you okay?”

Caitlin blinked at In-gong's reflexive question. As always, she nodded and replied,

“Yes, it isn't my blood.”

“Y-Yes.”

It wasn't blood but sticky green mucus. Caitlin's answer was lacking in focus, but she seemed unharmed. Thanks to the power of Conquest, she didn't feel the cold immediately.

"Prince, giver her some towels."

Carack said after running over belatedly. In-gong took some towels from his inventory and handed them to Caitlin. Seira couldn't be seen because she was fighting in Beast Form. As Caitlin wiped her face with the towel, a welcome voice was heard from behind him.

"Shutra!"

"Felicia noona."

Felicia, who came running up with Delia, sighed with relief when she saw In-gong. Her complexion was pale and her lips were blue. Unlike Caitlin, she seemed to be greatly affected by the cold.

"Are you okay?"

"I-I'm fine. Rather, Shutra, what is going on? Do you know these people?"

Felicia turned and pointed to the last frost worm. Locke was standing in front of a frost worm which collapsed with a spray of blood. In-gong moved his gaze a little further. Looking at the center of the climate manipulated area, there were two more familiar faces...

The Saintess Beatrice and Mercenary King Carlov. Just like how Nayatra and Vandal were Zephyr's subordinates, Beatrice and Carlov were Locke's most powerful companions.

"Perhaps."

In-gong replied as he turned his attention back to Locke. As though he was reacting to In-gong, Locke also turned toward this side.

The dead and those who suffered serious injuries numbered around 30, which was less than two-tenths the total force of 200.

It wasn't a small number, but considering the situation, it was quite good. It was because they were the elites of each species. If they were just normal soldiers of the army, then more than half of them would've been killed when the cave collapsed.

However, In-gong couldn't rest assured. It was clear that if they didn't prepare for the cold right now, the number of seriously wounded people would increase.

Due to this, the party engaged in treating the army before talking with Locke.

The weather beyond the limit line was a mess because of the disruptions in the flow of magic power. Thanks to Beatrice's climate manipulation, the flow of magic power in the nearby area was calm. This meant that Felicia and Daphne could summon earth spirits. They created a new cave for the party to avoid the cold.

Instead of building a new cave in case of an attack, they built an underground tunnel as a shelter and covered any traces with snow. It would be hard to find the presence of the shelter from a distance.

Beatrice and Carlov were amazed as they saw the large-scale work. It was the first time they had seen something like this using spirits.

'Climate manipulation seems much more amazing though.'

Heavy snow was piling up everywhere except for where they were. The blizzard was still raging outside the range of the climate manipulation, as though an invisible glass wall had been raised.

The soldiers not involved in the large scale work or healing the injured gawked at Locke's party. Locke was also looking at the soldiers. Then Beatrice frowned and asked him,

"Locke, the warriors of the Demon World... they somehow resemble you."

She wasn't talking about their faces or body shapes. It was the feeling they gave off which resembled Locke. There was someone who perceived something similar on In-gong's side.

“He kind of smells like Shutra. But Shutra has a much nicer smell.”

Caitlin sniffed as she looked at Locke’s group. Seira nodded from where she was standing behind Caitlin.

“It isn’t a similar flavour. This is different... like something else. It is a little strange, but he seems like he would be popular with the opposite sex, like Prince.”

It really was strange, but In-gong seemed to somehow understand. Maybe Locke had a special ability like Pheromones.

‘Locke was a harem master, unlike Zephyr.’

Besides Beatrice, there were a few more girls. In-gong suddenly looked at Nayatra, who was treating Vandal.

“How about it, Nayatra?”

“Yes? Uh...”

Rather than sniffing like Caitlin, Nayatra narrowed her eyes and stared at Locke. Then she frowned and came up with a similar answer to Caitlin.

“Obviously... charming. But Prince is much, much more attractive.”

“Y-Yes.”

It was nice but somewhat burdensome to hear the answer. Nayatra was a succubus susceptible to pheromones, so Locke only had weak pheromone ability.

Then Anastasia finished healing the soldiers and approached. She cocked her head as she heard the group’s words and asked,

“Shutra, is he another gandharva?”

Anastasia had heard the story of his scent before. However, she had never seen another gandharva before, so she wasn’t sure if Locke was one. Moreover, the lycanthropes, sura, and gandharva looked similar to each other, so it was difficult to

distinguish species based just on appearance.

The others looked at In-gong with curiosity. In-gong hesitated for a moment before replying,

“They are humans.”

“Humans?”

Chris was taken aback. It was the first time anyone here had seen a human.

“They really look just like us.”

Chris said with admiration, while Caitlin and Anastasia nodded blankly. Even Carack’s eyes were wide with surprise.

‘Uh, um. This is the difference in point of view.’

There were many species here such as orcs, dark elves, succubi, and lycanthropes.

Locke’s group approached the children of the demon king who were talking, aside from Felicia who was busy building the tunnel. Their chatter stopped instantly. Chris moved automatically to protect both Caitlin and Anastasia. Unlike Anastasia, Caitlin grumbled a little bit. Then In-gong stepped in front of Chris and greeted Locke.

“The Demon World’s Drakon Kechatulla, I have a suggestion.”

The group reacted in surprise when Locke said Drakon Kechatulla. It was because they had heard the it several times since Curtis. The great dragon warrior... How did a human know about the lizardmen’s title for In-gong? However, In-gong’s answer was even more amazing.

“The Human World’s Drakon Kechatulla, isn’t it better to introduce ourselves first?”

It was a stunning answer for everybody but Anastasia. In-gong was the Demon World’s Drakon Kechatulla and the man in front of them was the Human World’s Drakon Kechatulla?

“Yes.”

Warrior Locke smiled. His smile was charming even for men. Beatrice sighed and muttered from where she was standing behind him,

“I told you already.”

“Then I will do it from now on.”

Locke smiled again before bowing and saying,

“I am a warrior from the Human World, Locke. These are my colleagues, Light Saintess Beatrice and Mercenary King Carlov.”

Chris and Anastasia reacted to hearing the words ‘warrior’ and ‘saintess’. Anastasia’s reaction was subtle, but Chris was clearly vigilant as he let out a low growl. Locke, Beatrice, and Carlov remained calm like they had expected such reactions.

However, In-gong raised one hand to restrain Chris and said,

“I am 9th Prince Shutra Ignus. These are my half siblings 4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion, 7th Prince Chris Moonlight, and 8th Princess Caitlin Moonlight.”

Locke nodded as the children of the demon king were introduced, while Beatrice smiled. She seemed to be curious about the demon king’s children and glanced between Caitlin and Felicia.

Locke nodded and turned back to In-gong.

“Prince of the Demon World, I have a suggestion.”

“What is the suggestion?”

Was it to fight with them to take down Arch Lich Shutenberg? Or was it a temporary alliance? Political ties between the Human World and Demon World?

“I want to make a hot spring.”

“Huh?”

Locke smiled coolly at In-gong's confusion.

“Unni, will this be delicious as well? Shutra is the one who made it.”

“I-Is that so?”

Chapter 209

Storm #6

It was much easier than expected to create a hot spring in the middle of the blizzard.

Felicia, Daphne, and the other dark elves used earth spirits to create a place for the hot springs.

It was a huge exaggeration to say it was just making a hole in the ground. They were making a space which would fit 200 people without any pillars, but with dozens of earth spirits being mobilized, that meant the space was able to be created very quickly.

The next thing they needed was water, which was where Beatrice came in. There was talk about using snow on the ground. However, that was dismissed because the volume would be reduced extremely during the process of converting snow to water.

Beatrice simply filled the bath with water creation magic. Although both magic and divine power were necessary, this group had a saintess and powerful magicians.

The next step was to make the water hot. It was the hardest thing to do, but the solution ended up being very simple.

‘Master, this is really convenient.

‘I don’t think this technique was made for this purpose.’

As In-gong listened to Green Wind’s whispers, he created a smaller sun. It was around one meter in diameter, much smaller than the sun he had created to destroy Yosarina. However, this size was just right for the purpose. As soon as the sun sank into the middle of the bath, the water heated up quickly.

“Ohh.”

All the people who wanted to avoid the cold and the snowstorm cried out in admiration. Thanks to the steam rising up, all the air around them was warmed. Their

group had struggled in the cold weather for a few days, and fatigue had accumulated. So, everyone welcomed the hot bath.

“Don’t tell me we’ll enter this altogether?”

Anastasia frowned as she looked at the finished hot spring. It was unfamiliar for her to take a bath with anyone, let alone 200 people. The areas were divided up with rocks, but they were still entering the same water.

Felicia laughed at Anastasia’s sour face.

“It can’t be helped. Don’t worry too much.”

“It is ridiculous, but there is no other option.”

In-gong couldn’t create a new sun to create a separate hot spring, nor could the royal family order everyone else to wait until they finished bathing. Everyone was suffering from the cold, so Anastasia couldn’t be too conscious of her status in this situation.

The princesses, led by Anastasia, settled on the edge of the bath. The rocks divided the hot springs into sections. The waterways were connected, but it was virtually an independent space.

There were the three princesses and their aides, along with Beatrice, meaning there were seven people in this space. Caitlin was the first one to enter the bath. Her body shook, and her eyes closed as an expression of happiness appeared on her face. Felicia took a seat beside Caitlin, only for Caitlin to suddenly whisper,

“Unni, will this be delicious as well? Since Shutra is the one who made it.”

She gathered some water in her hands. It was water made by divine power, so it was very clear and transparent. Shutra had heated up the water. It wasn’t just normal hot water; it contained In-gong’s power. So, it was plausible.

“I-Is that so?”

Felicia gave a frivolous response before gathering water in her hands like Caitlin.

“That reminds me... isn’t the smell really great?”

It really was. The bath gave off a sweet aroma which was very pleasant.

“Your Highness, this is the feeling of bathing in the finest water.”

Delia said, and Caitlin nodded in agreement.

“It seems to make the skin smoother.”

After hearing those words, Felicia couldn't help imagining something. She imagined In-gong's body melting into the hot water little by little. As Felicia started imagining things alone, Caitlin sniffed a few times before bringing her tongue to the water collected in both hands.

“Uhh... somehow, I like it. Is it because of the feeling? It is similar to when I suck Shutra's finger...”

“Wait, what do you suck?”

Felicia exclaimed with surprise.

‘Suck his finger? When did she do it again?’

She was really just like a cat. While Felicia was in shock, Seira laughed and said,

“Princess, it isn't good to drink this water.”

“I know, Seira. The hot spring isn't Shutra.”

“That isn't significant...”

In the end, it was bath water. The water wasn't meant to be drunk. However, Felicia had to revise her imagination at Caitlin's words. This was like a large pot containing In-gong and various medicines.

‘Ah, no. This isn't it.’

Her imagination changed again. She imagined In-gong was inside the nicely scented bath alone.

‘Then...’

She imagined a little more. As a dopey smile appeared on Felicia’s face, Caitlin stared at her and blinked.

“Unni, you are blushing.”

Felicia was surprised by the finger poking her arm and said urgently,

“Ah, no? I didn’t imagine going into a bath with Shutra... hup?!”

She covered her mouth with both hands, but it was already too late. Caitlin and the aides all stared at Felicia, while Anastasia sighed from where she was watching them calmly.

“You... do you like Shutra?”

Of course, Anastasia felt favourable toward In-gong, but it wasn’t to the level of Felicia and Caitlin. Anastasia shook her head elegantly and said to Felicia,

“We aren’t servants but royalty, so marriages are possible. But... aren’t you half siblings? Don’t you know that it is very rare?”

“Uhh, what...”

There were occasional intermarriages for various reasons, such as maintaining the purity of blood or their power and fortune. However, it wasn’t recommended. Felicia and Caitlin knew such facts. However, the both of them knew something that Anastasia didn’t know, so they couldn’t reply.

“What are those looks?”

Anastasia narrowed her eyes. Felicia and Caitlin’s attitudes were suspicious.

It was at that moment that...

A small laugh was heard from the right. No one had been talking, so that small laugh became very obvious.

“I’m sorry.”

Beatrice stopped laughing and fixed her expression. There were many reasons for her to stay with the princesses, including for them to keep an eye on her.

“Unni said you are a saintess of the Human World?”

“Yes, Princess Caitlin.”

Beatrice responded with a smile to Caitlin’s words. She had been cautious when first entering the bath. However, she felt better after seeing the princesses chatting together. Anastasia turned to Beatrice and spoke in a voice which was different from when she talked to Felicia and Caitlin.

“You must’ve had a hard time coming this far.”

“It was a mission given to me.”

Beatrice also showed a different smile to what she gave Caitlin. The two people started to talk slowly, while the still recovering Felicia told a good story, instead of a silly joke.

Left alone, Caitlin started sniffing again, instead of interrupting. She closed her eyes and saw In-gong’s face.

“How bold.”

Chris frowned as he shared a bath with the other males, just like the princesses. Carack was lying beside him in the bath with his arms folded. However, Locke just replied without any fear.

“I’m not an enemy. Aren’t you also being very bold?”

Locke had suggested it, but this was a situation in which everyone were bathing together. Given that Locke and In-gong’s group had only met today, it was an amazing situation even if they had fought together.

Chris sneered at Locke's words before speaking again,

"You're a warrior from the Human World, a special being born among tens of millions of humans."

"That's right, I'm on a business trip right now."

There were six people in this bath, and they were In-gong, Chris, Silvan, Carack, Locke, and his companion, Carlov. Locke took a deep breath and spoke in a dramatic tone,

"Like I explained before, I am the Drakon Kechatulla of the Human World. I studied under one of the elder dragons, Guardian Queian. It is my role to keep the battle in the Demon World from spilling over into the Human World."

It had already been confirmed by In-gong that the Drakon Kechatullas and elder dragons were related. Therefore, Chris focused on the other part of Locke's words.

"Are you afraid that a battle beyond the limit line will spill over to the Human World?"

Locke shook his head.

"Arch Lich Shutenberg is clearly powerful, but he isn't the only enemy. The ultimate reason why the Guardian sent me is to stop the Four Knights of the Apocalypse. That's why I met up with the Demon World's Drakon Kechatulla."

Locke's eyes turned to In-gong, and Chris glanced at In-gong as well. While In-gong was a Drakon Kechatulla chosen by the elder dragons, he was also a artificial being with the divinity of the gandharvas and a prince of the Demon World. These were enough qualifications for him to become the protagonist.

Chris couldn't help sighing and looked back at Locke.

"I believe in Shutra, not you. So, refrain from any suspicious behaviour."

"Of course."

Locke smiled, and the silent Silvan finally spoke up.

"Locke, is that a sword from the elder dragon?"

Locke's sword was unusual. Locke nodded at Silvan's question.

"That's right, the Guardian made it. The Guardian told me to collect all six equipment of the elder dragons."

"Then you should give Shutra the Warrior's Sword. Shutra already has four pieces."

Chris said ferociously. Locke shrugged as he stated that he had no intention to hand over the elder dragon's weapon.

"I don't intend to snatch In-gong's equipment away. We are allies now. We are also both Drakon Kechatullas."

There was no selfishness in Locke's eyes. Then he looked away and continued speaking,

"Master said that both the War Knight and Death Knight seem to be located in the north. If we knock down Shutenberg and the Knights of the Apocalypse, then my mission is over. After that, I will return to the Human World with Beatrice."

"Hey, Locke. What about me?"

Carlov frowned, but no one focused on his words. Chris' eyes narrowed as he folded his arms. He had heard the story of the Four Knights of the Apocalypse from In-gong and Felicia.

"Shutra said that Gerard was the Famine Knight... If the Death Knight and War Knight is in the north, the only one left is the Conquest Knight..."

"Yes, only the Conquest Knight."

Locke agreed as he looked at In-gong. Neither Locke's expression nor voice seemed odd. Rather, Locke reached out his hand to In-gong like he wanted a handshake.

"Once again, it is nice to meet you, Drakon Kechatulla of the Demon World."

The protagonist of the Human World, Warrior Locke...

In-gong had never imagined that he would encounter Locke this way, but Queian had responded to the actions of the Four Knights of the Apocalypse. As a warrior, Locke was certainly a strong ally. Moreover, if he was the same as Locke from Knight Saga, then he would return to the Human World as soon as this was over. In-gong looked at Locke's hand for a moment and laughed. He reached out to shake it and said,

"Just Shutra is enough."

"Then you can just call me Locke."

"I was already calling you Locke."

"Is that so?"

Locke laughed again, and In-gong smiled brightly.

"Naked men are laughing while holding hands."

Carack said bluntly, and In-gong and Locke quickly released their hands. It was at this moment that...

"Master."

He heard a woman's voice in his ears. Moreover, a very soft and gentle touch was delivered to his body on the skin.

"G-Greenie?"

It was Green Wind. As she suddenly appeared in reality, the confused In-gong covered his lower body with both hands. However, it was very obvious because the water was so transparent. Green Wind made a puzzled sound.

"Why are you doing that when I see it every day?"

Chris and Caracks' eyebrows raised at Green Wind's words. In-gong exclaimed hurriedly,

"Ah, no? And every day? What are you talking about?"

It truly was news for him. Surely, Green Wind hadn't been peeking at In-gong every day? In-gong had forgotten that Green Wind had been with him 24 hours a day since leaving Enger Plains.

Carack summed up the situation.

"Anyway, Guardian, why have you appeared all of a sudden?"

Green Wind shook her head at the question and said in an urgent voice,

"Master, the stupid raccoon seems to have drunk too much of the bath water."

"Bath water?"

In-gong got up quickly, put on some clothes, and moved to the place where Amita was. Amita while lying on the ground with a puffed up stomach, while Daphne sighed from next to them.

"Heavenly Wine... the taste of the Heavenly Wine..."

There was nothing more to be said. Locke looked at In-gong and asked,

"A pet?"

In-gong then returned to his bath instead of answering.

Then next morning, In-gong's group marched toward Shutenberg's castle.

Chapter 210

Rendezvous

Around 500 years ago, the Demon King's Palace ended the Era of Struggle and unified the kingdom.

In the Human World, 500 years was a long time, and they spanned dozens of generations. However, it was different in the Demon world. Like the other species of the Demon World, the demon kings had longevity, so there had only been six demon kings who ruled during the 500 years of history.

The invincible king, who ended the Era of Struggle, had ruled for the shortest period of time. He had established the Demon King's Palace and left his position in the 12th year of his reign.

The first demon king was an old man by the time he set up the palace. It had taken him over 100 years to end the Era of Struggle, so he had led his army for over 100 years.

The demon king was obviously old, but the decisive reason for his retirement wasn't age. When considering the lifespan of the sura, the demon king was only middle-aged when he retired and still far from death.

There was only one reason for the first demon king to step down. He had become weaker. The demon king of the second generation had surpassed his strength.

The second demon king had been the first demon king's nephew. The first demon king had no children, so it seemed natural for his nephew to rise to his throne. For several species in the Demon World, it was natural for family members to succeed the throne.

However, the real reason why the second demon king inherited the throne wasn't because he was the flesh and blood of the first demon king. It was for a much simpler and clearer reason. By the time the first demon king stepped down, the second demon king had become the strongest person in the Demon World.

The second demon king had reigned over the Demon World for over 100 years. The

third demon king after him had been the strongest among his children. The third king had also ruled for a long time. In the fourth generation, the one who had inherited the title of demon king was his much beloved third daughter.

However, she hadn't been the strongest person in the Demon World, as all her predecessors had been. She hadn't even been the strongest among the children of the demon king. She had been able to rise to the throne because the third demon king loved her very much. However, her siblings had then fought and killed each other.

The one who had ended up becoming the fourth demon king had been the strongest of the remaining siblings, both individually and with the forces behind him.

The fifth demon king had been the eldest son of the fourth king. He had been the strongest among the children of the demon king but not the strongest person in the Demon World. He then became obsessed with the bloodline of the ancient king and made a law that only the children of the queens could inherit the throne among the children of the demon king. The fifth demon king had many concubines, but his queen had been a sura who was his cousin and had been with him since childhood.

In the fifth generation, the king and queen only had one child. Therefore, the sixth demon king had been able to rise to the position without any competition. However, ironically, the sixth demon king was the strongest person in the Demon World, unlike some of his predecessors.

He was the sura king, Mitra...

The current demon king.

The demon king stayed alone in a room covered in darkness. More than 10 years had passed since he left his bedroom in the Black Castle and moved to a place where only the sword duke knew how to approach.

Among the previous demon kings, Mitra had the largest number of queens and concubines as well as the largest number of children.

1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros, the eldest of the demon king's children, was only in his late 20s. In the eyes of the various species in the Demon World, Baikal was still just a

child.

All the children of the demon king were young. Based on the Demon World, the differences in their ages were extremely small. All the children had been born between 30 and 10 years ago.

That period had also been when the demon king began living with his illness. Decades had passed by, and the demon king's illness hadn't improved. There had been a period of stagnation, but that was it.

Unlike his predecessors, the demon king had grown up in the Sanctuary. Therefore, he could understand why the second demon king had inherited the throne from the first demon king.

The demon king wasn't the ruler of the Demon World; he was the Demon World's protector.

The reason why the strongest person in the Demon World had to become the demon king wasn't to press everyone else down. A clearer reason existed.

The demon king's gaze moved away, and he got up in the darkness.

Arch Lich Shutenberg wasn't a fool.

It had been over 1,000 years since he became a lich. In the Era of Struggle, he had been referred to as the Half King. Shutenberg had lived a long life before becoming a lich. If he combined all the years he had lived, there were more than 1,000 years. This wasn't a small number.

However, he wasn't the oldest existence. There were those who had lived for much longer in the Demon World.

Arch Lich Shutenberg thought about one of them, the oldest being in the Demon World. Compared to him, even the elder dragons could be called new.

A bitter smile appeared on Shutenberg's skeletal face as he recognized those who were heading towards his realm.

There was Sword Duke Ishgard, an elder of the sura and the one who had taught the demon king...

And 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros, the strongest prince. The day he was born, the dragons had felt a tremor because of how gifted he was. There was also Warrior Locke, a miracle born among the hundreds of millions of humans. He was the Drakon Kechatulla raised by Guardian Queian. Along with Locke, there was the 9th Prince, Shutra Ignus, the Conquest Knight and the Demon World's Drakon Kechatulla. He was more dangerous than Zephyr and Warrior Locke.

Lastly, there were the ones with them as well. All the children of the demon king had come, except for 3rd Prince Victor Nekrion.

Arch Lich Shutenberg sat back in his throne. They were all gathering in one place.

As Indara had said, the cold and blizzard became weaker as they proceeded to the north. However, it was still comparable to the coldest region in the Demon World.

Moreover, as the blizzard and cold weather weakened, the attacks of various creatures increased. The undead created by Shutenberg attacked extensively, and they had to fight several times a day.

In-gong understood why the sword duke had prepared a small army of elites to advance through the north. Only the elites would be able to march through the north towards Shutenberg's castle without collapsing of exhaustion.

They didn't know when the attacks would come, so they couldn't afford to make a hot spring like when they had first met Locke. All they could do was eat and sleep in the shelter which Felicia and Daphne kept on making.

In the midst of the snowstorm, Amita pounded their hammer. Their small raccoon hand was wielding a big hammer with force, but the sound of the wind was so loud that there was no need to worry about the sound leaking out of the shelter.

"What is it?"

Amita, who was repairing the weapons destroyed by repeated battles, looked next to them with a frown. Carack smiled and replied from the rock where he was watching Amita,

“No, you just look like a real craftsman this time. Are you a craftsman? I don’t see the same person who drank bath water until their stomach became sore.”

“Kak!”

Amita growled angrily, and Carack just laughed. Despite everything else, Amita was genuinely skilled. Moreover, they had started listening to In-gong obediently thanks to the Heavenly Wine.

‘Prince, you must keep this a secret.’

Otherwise, it was clear that Amita would pounce on In-gong in order to get a taste.

Carack imagined Amita gnawing on In-gong’s fingers and laughed again. The most eye-catching area was the place where the princesses were gathered.

“Beatrice unni, tell me more stories about the Human World.”

Beatrice was located between the princesses and their aides. Caitlin had befriended Beatrice over the last few days and now called her ‘unni’. Beatrice wasn’t from the Demon World, so she claimed that the stiff title was needed.

Anastasia sighed as she looked at Caitlin all over the Human World’s saintess. She liked Beatrice after spending a few days together, but the time was still too short. Anastasia was uneasy at the fact that Caitlin seemed to have forsaken all vigilance.

“Caitlin, don’t play around too much. Shouldn’t you give the Saintess a rest?”

Caitlin flinched at the reproach, however, Beatrice just smiled slowly.

“It is okay, Princess Anastasia. It isn’t anything hard to talk about.”

Anastasia couldn’t say anything in response to that. As she backed away with a disgruntled expression, Caitlin smiled widely and hugged Beatrice.

“Bea unni, I like you a lot.”

Beatrice smiled with a pleased expression, and Felicia’s lips distorted as she watched the two people. She felt somehow like she was being deprived of Caitlin.

Carack laughed at the sight of the princesses playing well and headed towards the entrance of the shelter. It wasn’t just the princesses. The mercenary king and warrior were also mixing well with the troops. Their stories of the strange Human World were welcomed by all.

After reaching the entrance of the shelter, Carack exited it while lightly greeting the soldier guarding it. It was a mysterious sight to see snowflakes in the sky of the Demon World, but it only caused curses for the last few days.

“Carack.”

“Prince.”

In-gong looked away from where he was staring at the sky and turned toward Carack, who moved toward In-gong in his winter clothes.

“It is night, so you should rest.”

“Wait a minute.”

After stopping Carack, In-gong closed his eyes and took a deep breath. Instead of looking at In-gong, Carack looked up at the sky. There was a small green light shimmering in the distance.

In-gong was sharing Green Wind’s vision and looking around from a high place. The mini-map was heavily influenced by the user’s actual range of vision. Therefore, the range of the mini-map was widened dramatically when viewed from a high position.

Then In-gong opened his eyes. Carack recognized that White eagle had begun to descend rapidly from the sky and asked,

“We aren’t far away?”

“Yes, we should arrive no later than the day after tomorrow.”

Arch Lich Shutenberg...

He wasn't a big presence in Knight Saga. Shutenberg was powerful, but he was a type of hidden boss who didn't have a big influence on the story. However, in this world, his existence was obviously different. The evidence was that not just In-gong's involvement but that the sword duke and Zephyr were involved as well.

In-gong's mind felt heavier. The children of the demon king were all together, but he still felt worried.

The Death Knight and War Knight...

How long would those two remain silent? They were also in the north, so they should be acting.

His head was cold, but his thoughts were becoming complicated. Carack raised his hand to In-gong's shoulder.

"Prince."

Carack smiled as In-gong turned to him.

"Don't overthink it too much."

In-gong couldn't help smiling in response.

"Yes."

White Eagle returned, then In-gong looked towards the north.

As Zephyr sat on the back of Quanta, he looked towards the west from the sky. Due to the snowstorm, it was impossible to see it with the naked eye, but he could tell.

Shutenberg's castle wasn't far. Depending on the enemy's resistance, they could arrive as early as tomorrow.

Zephyr closed his eyes and focused his senses. The armour of the elder dragon on his body, Cruel Talia's Armour, seemed to growl in response to something.

"Let's go back."

Zephyr gave a low order, and Quanta headed towards the ground. In the midst of the strong winds, Zephyr once again looked in the direction of Shutenberg's castle.

The War Knight spoke.

Arch Lich Shutenberg could feel it.

The Death Knight didn't wait any longer and raised his body from the throne.

Chapter 211

Rendezvous #2

Time passed by. It was a bit longer than a day.

Each group was moving toward one goal. There were several different movements, with interlocking fights.

Then it was time...

Now, there was no turning back.

1st Prince Baikal Ragnaros took a deep breath as he looked at the castle. The frigid cold beyond the limit line was obviously threatening, but the draconians' strong bodies had already completely adapted.

Baikal's lungs had already stabilized against the cold. The warmth and gentleness which Anastasia liked so much was shining in his eyes.

There were hundreds of draconian knights by his side. They wore black cloaks and had been with Baikal for over a decade, so they could breathe as one.

Baikal didn't know much about Arch Lich Shutenberg. He just knew that Shutenberg was a formidable enemy once called the Half King as well as a powerful lich who had lived since the Era of Struggle.

However, Baikal thought that was enough. He was just an enemy to be removed. It was easy to forget due to Baikal's mild temperament, but he contained the blood of King Zanskal, who was famous among the draconian rulers.

A snowy field stretched out beyond the blizzard, and at the end of the snowy field was a huge castle made of ice. He knew intuitively without anyone telling him that this was Arch Lich Shutenberg's castle.

His cloak blew in the wind, and Baikal took a deep breath. Instead of looking back, he pulled out his sword. In the raging blizzard, there was a roar which announced the start of the battle. 100 draconians using Dragon Style rushed forward, with their aura rising around them like flames.

Then Shutenberg responded. The snow piled high in the wake of the fierce Dragon Style rush. Every gust of wind changed the appearance of the snowy field.

Baikal understood, and Sektum shook as he stared at Shutenberg's castle in the distance.

Arch Lich Shutenberg, he was the person who had made Sektum an undead. He was the world's greatest necromancer!

"I am back. I'm back! Shutenberg!"

As Sektum raised his fist, thousands of undead shone as they prepared for battle. It was the undead which he had made with the bodies of the soldiers and creatures who died beyond the limit line.

Sektum ordered a charge, and the undead rushed towards the castle. At the same time, the snowy field moved as well. Tens of thousands of undead raised themselves from the snow.

So far, it was like he had expected. It was a number they could face. However, Sektum realized something. It wasn't just tens of thousands. It hadn't been the wind which changed the appearance of the snow. The whole snowfield moved, revealing the snow had covered all the undead. Hundreds of thousands...

An enormous number of undead stepped forward at the same time like a huge tsunami.

The War Knight ran, and the red woman embraced the War Knight's shoulders.

The flames of War were rising. No one could stop them now.

War thought of Conquest. She remember the face of the white woman who she both loved and hated, and a lovely smile emerged.

He didn't scream.

Baikal stared in front of him. Rather than being overwhelmed by the tsunami of Shutenberg's undead, he looked at the entire battlefield.

There was a strange light, and he felt a strong magic power from the snowfield as the undead rose.

'It can't be.'

Baikal didn't know it for sure, but he sought to deny his intuition. However, he couldn't. He already understood.

Sektum swallowed back a scream and remembered why he had fled instead of fighting against Shutenberg.

Thousands of undead clashed with hundreds of thousands of undead. As they trampled on and destroyed each other, the draconians led by Baikal rushed forward.

The ice dragon Quanta poured out her cold breath, and her big wings blew away the undead. Meanwhile, Zephyr's magicians chanted hundreds of magic spells at the same time.

It was a cool sight. Hundreds of thousands of undead were destroyed in an instant. Hundreds of magic spells poured down from the sky and swept over the undead. In a single collision, thousands of undead were destroyed. The enemy might have overwhelming numbers, but the quality of Baikal's troops were far superior.

However, Sektum was desperate. He had forgotten to create new undead as he stared at the magic circle, which covered the entire snowy field, start to shine. There were no spells or chants. Shutenberg's broken and destroyed undead were raised again. The skeleton's broken bones were restored, while the ghouls gained new bodies.

The tsunami didn't stop, and the army of the demon king gulped.

The Death Knight took a step forward and picked up the sword which had been created 1,000 years ago. As he put on the blue and black armour, he only thought of one death.

The rush of hundreds of thousands of undead was like a tsunami. There seemed to be nothing which could stop it. It was their future to be destroyed by that tsunami.

However, they couldn't think differently. Compare to that great tsunami, they were too small and shabby.

The undead ran. They trampled each other. The broken undead rose again to continue that huge tsunami.

Even Baikal's draconians warriors, who had a lot of experience, felt fearful.

However, there was one person who didn't feel any fear. He stood in front of everyone, grabbed the handle of his sword and greeted the nearest undead.

Then the tsunami struck. At the same time, he drew his sword.

Sword Duke Ishgard...

He cut the tsunami.

It was like an island formed in that area. The sharpness was enough to cut both time and space. However, a catastrophe, which was supposed to destroy the sky and the ground didn't happen. The atmosphere didn't tear to pieces either.

There was just the cry of a sharp sword which spread over the snowy field. The undead at the front collapsed, and the fearsome momentum stopped. All of them were split apart.

The sword duke adjusted his hold on the sword. He swung his sword again before the bodies of the undead could be raised. This time, the undead a little further away were affected by the sword duke's movement, and the wind dug through the undead.

If he dealt with them one by one, there would be no end. So, the sword duke considered doing a frontal breakthrough. He was going to destroy the nucleus of the magic circle in order to stop the resurrection of the undead.

Baikal understood the sword duke's plan, and his draconians threw themselves to open a path for the sword duke. Sektum once again created more undead, while Zephyr's 100 magicians and 200 knights became a fortress on the battlefield. Dark Saintess Altesia started praying. She was calling the great powers of Erebus to the earth.

Quanta struck the undead from the sky, and Zephyr looked down from her back. For the first time since entering the battlefield, he shouted at the sword duke.

The sword duke heard Zephyr's cry. Simultaneously, he confirmed it with his own eyes. There was a person rising up from among the undead. He rode a giant black horse and was holding a giant sword in his hand.

The sword duke changed the direction of his sword hastily and cut to the right instead of the front. His sword swept away the undead, but he couldn't cut the black horse. The person riding on the black horse blocked the sword duke's attack. It was the first time Baikal had seen the man on the black horse. However, he instantly realized who it was, and he screamed out,

"Winter King!"

It was the king of the northern barbarians...

The presence who didn't allow the captains to leave the Aegis Gate!

A blue energy was pouring from his whole body, which was wrapped in a black armour. Then the sword duke changed the direction of his sword. He attacked the winter king.

The power of Arch Lich Shutenberg exceeded expectations. No one had expected the winter king to appear here.

Shutenberg's magic circle was still being maintained. Baikal and his 100 draconians tried desperately to break through the undead, but it wasn't easy. The battle between the sword duke and the winter king was devastating the surrounding area, and no one dared interfere with their fight.

‘Why?’

The sword duke thought as he fought the winter king. The the winter king attacked whilst seated on his huge horse, and the attack was heavy and violent. It was impossible to compare the winter king to the demon king, but the winter king's power was still enough to cut down a captain of the Demon King's Palace.

He had never imagined there would be a contact between Arch Lich Shutenberg and the winter king. If they were allied, why did only Shutenberg attack the Sanctuary? Why didn't the winter king come out directly?

It was hard to imagine the relationship between Shutenberg and the winter king. The auras released by the sword duke and the winter king exploded against each other and went in different directions. The hundreds of undead in the surrounded area turned into powder instantly.

The winter king was covered with a blue energy, but it wasn't just mere aura. It was the type of power the sword duke had encountered at Thunderdoom Fortress.

The Death Knight...

No, the winter king wasn't the Death Knight. He was definitely one step lower!

Kwang!

A roar shook their ears. Simultaneously, Altesia's prayer was completed. Altesia, who was covered in sweat, shouted in a lively voice,

“Sma-sh!”

Her voice spread through the battlefield. Perhaps this was a miracle from Erebus, the

God of Darkness.

A black power, which was the opposite of Altesia's youthfulness, stretched out in menacingly across the sky. It took away the false life from the undead and gave them true death. Tens of thousands of flying undead returned to the ground in an instant. The dark power of Erebus affected Shutenberg's magic circle temporarily. The undead flying in the sky crashed to the ground and couldn't get back up again.

The reason for Altesia's attack to occur in the sky, and not the ground, was to create a gap. As she leaned on a long staff, Altesia stared into the sky. Meanwhile, the ice dragon Quanta was rushing toward the center of the circle. However, it was an enormous magic circle with a diameter of several kilometers. Even the approach of flying from the air didn't make sense.

Quanta aimed her frost breath towards the ground. The undead which were using the power of the magic circle were frozen. Zephyr prepared a powerful spell from his position on Quanta's back. Even if it was Zephyr, it was impossible to crush a magic circle of this size with one blow. It was best to prevent the resurrection of the undead by destroying key functions.

Zephyr chanted his spell quickly. Quanta had almost reached the center of the circle. At that moment, a huge hand rose from the ground. Made of tens of thousands of undead, the giant hand grabbed Quanta's neck and the undead ran along her back. Quanta struggled but couldn't escape the giant hand.

Then Altesia started to chant a new prayer. Zephyr gave Quanta a command, and she turned into a gandharva.

Zephyr kicked in the air and used Telekinesis to stay there. In mid-air, Quanta turned her body. She was once again in the form of the giant ice dragon and swung her tail in a huge sweep. Quanta didn't stop there as she used the magic power in her body to devastate the surroundings.

Zephyr once again kicked in the air. He was still quite a distance from the center of the circle.

Chwaaaaaak!

Thousands of bats flocked before Zephyr. These were senior undead vampires which

hadn't shown up until now. They were an ancient vampire species, different from the Day Walkers. The vampires took on the appearance of bats and used powerful magic. In an instant, bursts of lightning, wind, and ice flew toward Zephyr.

Then Zephyr saw someone in the center of the magic circle, beyond the vampires. Just like Yosarina, it was another one of Shutenberg's subordinates. She was called Cabellina, the frost monarch.

She had silver hair, white skin, and blue eyes that glared at Zephyr. Right then, Zephyr made a decision in a split second. He exploded the magic, which he had prepared beforehand, at the vampires rushing toward him.

There was a fierce storm of magic power, and the magic of the vampires was swept away and destroyed. The vampires could no longer maintain the form of bats and crashed into the ground. They were strongly affected by the magic storm and vomited out blood.

The undead were also affected. All undead in a radius of 100 meters around Zephyr collapsed. Within the influence of the mighty magic storm, even Shutenberg's enchantments couldn't raise the undead again.

However, Cabellina just laughed loudly. It was because she thought that such a great amount of magic would be impossible to produce again. She ordered the undead to charge. The center was guarded by many senior undead, and many death knights raised their swords.

Zephyr exhaled and stood up straight. The wave of undead would appear again after the magic storm disappeared, but he didn't lose his composure. Instead of watching Cabellina, Zephyr turned his gaze somewhere else. The sword duke, who was fighting against the winter king, smiled for a moment.

A flurry of wind was coming from the south. No, it was faster than the wind. Without realising it, Altesia had stopped her prayer as she gazed in that direction. Quanta and Sektum were no different.

"The finest saintess battery!"

There was an unknown cry. At that moment, a white flag appeared behind an orc who gave a large battle cry. The white mass sped up. They didn't slow down and literally

tore through the undead. From the front of the charging white mass, the sound of hundreds of birds flapping could be heard.

Chwaaaaaack!

Dark blue smoke crossed hundreds of meters of undead, and the undead were all smashed by black blades. Then the dark blue smoke ended. There were two people standing there. One was a warrior holding a mighty sword, while the other one clenched his fist and faced Zephyr.

Zephyr stared at In-gong...

And In-gong stared right back. Then at the same time, the two people turned their gazes towards the center of the magic circle.

“Spiritualism.”

It was the strongest prince and the gandharva god.

Chapter 212

Rendezvous #3

Long black hair stretched out, red eyes turned gold, and a heavenly scent filled the surroundings.

Locke had already encountered this, this but he still stared at In-gong. Zephyr wasn't much different; his gaze turned from the center of the magic circle to In-gong. A smile formed on Locke's face, and Zephyr's eyes lit up.

"Heh, my master is amazing."

Green Wind suddenly sounded like Felicia. Locke, who was nearby, laughed as he heard Green Wind's words and then stared at the front again. Zephyr didn't hear Green Wind's voice, but he couldn't help frowning a little bit. Rather than delaying further, he focused his attention on the center of the magic circle again.

'It is too early to be surprised. My master is much more amazing!'

Green Wind shouted. Fortunately, In-gong was the only one who heard it this time. He ignored Green Wind and called up the divine flame in his body. As In-gong gazed toward the front, he also looked at the mini-map to figure out the situation.

There were red dots all over the map. The number of undead was enormous, and In-gong, Locke, and Zephyr were in the center of them.

Thanks to Zephyr's magic, the nearby undead were swept away, but that was a small number compared to the entire battlefield. Moreover, it was a hole which could be filled at any time. The area which In-gong had passed by with Black Specter had also filled up with new undead.

Zephyr didn't explain it, but In-gong immediately understood. Zephyr's purpose was to strike the center of the incredibly big magic circle. The undead would keep recovering if the magic circle wasn't destroyed.

“Let’s go, Green Wind.”

‘I understand, Master.’

Then In-gong’s aura exploded. Green Wind, who had been promoted to an apostle, revealed her goddess form behind In-gong. Thanks to Green Wind’s strong winds, the heavenly scent spread through the battlefield.

Kwang!

In-gong kicked against the ground, and a dust cloud was generated due to the tremendous momentum. He was running faster than the wind.

Cabellina, who had been caught by the heavenly scene, quickly recovered while recalling the death of Yosarina. As she gathered her magic power angrily, the death knights around her rushed toward In-gong. There were dozens of them.

“Quanta!”

Quanta, who had been enjoying the divine scent, landed on the ground at Zephyr’s order and aimed her cold breath at the vampires. Then she swept away the undead around her with her tail. As Zephyr passed through the frozen vampires, he prepared a new spell, and a mighty magic power moved around him.

Locke prayed to the gods. If Saintess Beatrice was the most beloved of her god, then Locke was one of the most divine human beings.

Several gods of the Human World had blessed Locke. This was proven by the seven glorious lights which now emerged from Locke’s sword. The divinity was so strong that the undead fell down just from standing near Locke. Locke focused his divine power on the Warrior’s Sword and thrust off from the ground, catching up with the quick In-gong in the blink of an eye.

There weren’t just three people fighting. Carack stuck the flag of light into the ground, and the power of Conquest increased the strength of all their allies.

Caitlin once again showed the power of an apostle. Her dark eyes, which resembled the night sky, were drenched in pure white. However, that wasn’t the only change; Caitlin became more mature. She completely conquered the lycanthrope blood in her

body, and like Chris, she exploded it. Caitlin's fangs sharpened, a wolf's tail sprang out, and the pupils of both her eyes changed into a beast's. As her height grew, her breasts enlarged as well.

However, Caitlin maintained her mind. Rather than rushing randomly, she protected her territory with angry roars. Her mission was to protect everyone, including Felicia. Meanwhile, Vandal didn't consider the number of enemies. He just swung his hammer at the enemies around him. Contrary to Vandal, Chris had a more strategic mindset and headed towards Baikal's party. Simultaneously, Silvan took off his eyepatch, and golden light flashed from the fairy like lightning. Every time he swung his sword, dozens of undead exploded.

"Baikal orabeoni!"

Anastasia sensed Baikal fighting in the distance and bit her lips. If the undead were the enemies, then she couldn't use any bewitchment magic. Therefore, her mission shifted. Instead of Beatrice, who was breathing hard from working for half a day, Anastasia would become a new battery for the party.

She cast several spells simultaneously, and they were all wide area magic.

These were powerful magic spells to boost the ones currently fighting. Their courage grew, and they soon forgot their fear. A new vigor was breathed into the flesh of those fighting.

Felicia also supported her allies on the battlefield. Like Anastasia, Felicia didn't use direct magic spells but limited the battlefield by using a powerful Fire Barrier. She was anxious because she couldn't see In-gong through all the undead, but she was encouraged by the heavenly scent.

"T-That smell?!"

Amita sniffed enthusiastically but could barely discern it. In order to protect Daphne who was preparing various recovery magic, Amita gathered the power of the last flame in their hands. They sniffed some more while preparing to cast a barrier once again.

However, there was still too many enemies. For this great number, they needed thousands of people who could take out many enemies with one strike.

It was then that Baikal made a decision. He noticed Chris' movements and moved to join the other royal children instead of moving towards the center. However, he never forgot the sword duke. Baikal could neither enter the vicinity where the sword duke and winter king were fighting nor leave the sword duke alone. In order to be able to help at any time, Baikal also kept an eye on the sword duke's fight.

The battlefield had transformed into a breathtaking melee. At the forefront, In-gong collided with the death knights.

Kwang!

Earth Quaker growled angrily as the first conflict started. In-gong moved smoothly like the wind, so the death knights couldn't catch him. Then he slammed his fist into a death knight's chest.

That death knight's massive power was destroyed. In-gong soon moved onto another Death Knight as Green Wind also took action.

Kwakakakak!

White Eagle, Alpha Black Eagle, and Beta Black Eagle struck the heads and chests of the death knights repeatedly. Unable to withstand Green Wind's brutal attacks as well as the power of Conquest which suppressed the power of Death, the death knights' heads and chests shattered.

In-gong adjusted his breathing, then he took a deep breath and threw himself between the pincer attacks of a second and third death knight. Concentrating his strength on both his legs, there was no need for In-gong to think as he used a technique.

'Divine Sura Authority—New Lightning.'

Lightning emerged from In-gong. Then the white lightning which started from In-gong, drew a sharp trail over the waist and chest of the death knights, pushing them away. The old Lightning would've ended here, but this one took it one step further. Intense lightning poured towards the remaining death knights.

Kwakakakakang!

The sound of thunder rang out, and the death knights couldn't catch up with In-gong's movements. The sounds of the death knights' chests, waists and legs being destroyed fired up White Eagle and Black Eagle.

Then New Lightning ended, but In-gong still didn't stop. He turned into blue smoke to avoid a death knight's attack from the side. His body was soon reconstructed, and he rushed towards the center of the magic circle.

The frost monarch, Cabellina, panicked. She didn't know what to do as In-gong defeated the death knights and advanced. Additionally, In-gong wasn't the only one here; Zephyr's magic power was getting heavier. Quanta was still showing great strength, and there was the warrior who was emitting a resplendent light.

Cabellina had to protect the magic circle, but she couldn't think of any methods to do so. The death knights and vampires rushing in were just like new firewood being thrown into roaring flames. As Cabellina gritted her teeth, she erased all complicated thoughts and stared at In-gong who was charging toward her. She focused her magic power and prepared to fight.

Then at that moment...

Cabellina felt her magic power swell up. The death knights as well as the vampires became stronger, and there was a vortex of mighty magic power in the center of the magic circle.

"Ahh!"

Cabellina was filled with joy. She had no choice. It was the master of this magic power... This was his power. The magic circle, which covered the entire battlefield, started to shine once again. Dark clouds filled the sky, then a blizzard started due to the flow of magic power.

Beatrice, who had barely recovered thanks to Anastasia's recovery magic, gasped and grabbed her chest. Altesia, the dark saintess, showed a response similar to Beatrice.

This new power was a power beyond reason. The light of the magic circle became stronger and so did the vortex in the sky and on the ground. There was only one person who could create such a miracle on the battlefield. Both of the vortexes exploded. The space distorted, and there was a huge crack in the air.

The undead stopped fighting and shouted towards the sky. There were hundreds of thousands of them, so it seemed like the earth and sky were shaking.

The winter king and sword duke stared at the center of the magic circle, and the winter king smiled joyfully.

The crack in the air grew bigger, then finally, it broke. As the sky shattered, a huge presence emerged.

Blue lightning struck between the dark clouds. The dark clouds headed towards the ground, while the blizzard soared towards the sky. In the heart of this scene, magic power swirled.

Quanta shook with fear. Everyone within the center of the magic circle reacted in the same manner. Anastasia's breathing became harsh, while Felicia's hands shook involuntarily. The always present smile disappeared from Altesia's face, and Sektum fell to the ground, struggling against the pain.

Chris had thought that the power invested into this mission was far too excessive, but it was different now. He understood the reason why the sword duke had concentrated so much power here.

The new presence was huge. He wore purple clothes which were closer to black, and his right hand held a staff while his left hand held a sharp sword. Specters roamed around him. His skull had a golden crown on it, and blue lights gleamed from where his eyes were supposed to be.

Arch Lich Shutenberg, also known as the Half King...

His gaze turned toward In-gong.

Chapter 213

Rendezvous #4

The War Knight gazed far away, while War looked on with trepidation.

A new battlefield appeared in the War Knight's sights.

The Half King stared at In-gong. Then all the undead on the battlefield looked at In-gong as well. Hundreds of thousands of eyes swallowed up In-gong like a flood. It was truly excessive.

Green Wind was overwhelmed for a moment. For the first time since she had joined In-gong, her shoulders slumped with fear. It was a brutal evil. The hundreds of thousands of eyes felt like swords and axes slicing at her spirit. Green Wind trembled. Her complexion was pale, and she couldn't breathe. Tears poured from her eyes like she was a child.

'Death. Ceasing to exist. Destruction.' That was what she thought. She couldn't think of anything else.

At that moment, just as her spirit was about to be crushed...

In-gong raised his hands. Before the numerous gazes, he raised his arm horizontally like he was hiding Green Wind. In-gong faced the hundreds of thousands of eyes as well, and Shutenberg's gaze was heavy. However, In-gong faced it straight on; he didn't back down.

His divinity grew, and the white woman shouted from In-gong's soul,

'Conquer!

'Obey and rule!'

Kwang!

An explosive sound rang out, and In-gong forced back Shutenberg's power of compulsion. As the white light collided with Shutenberg's power, it caused an explosion. This was the power of Conquest. Simultaneously, it was also the power of Dhrtarastra.

Green Wind gasped for air and regained control of herself. As she once more felt her affection toward In-gong, she created a strong wind to keep him safe.

There were two more people and not just In-gong who cut off Shutenberg's power. One of them had grabbed the Warrior's Sword, while the other had pulled out his dragon slayer.

One was Warrior Locke, the protagonist of the Human World in Knight Saga. The other one was 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros, the protagonist of the Demon World in Knight Saga.

The two people accompanied In-gong, raising their weapons against the same enemy. A smile flashed on In-gong's face. Although he knew it wasn't the time, he couldn't help laughing. He was with these two... In-gong was going to fight the enemy with both of them.

Locke laughed as well. Zephyr frowned like he thought both of them were crazy.

"He's coming."

Locke said, and Zephyr agreed. Shutenberg raised his staff and sword at the same time. The specters wandering around Shutenberg rushed towards the three people with loud screeches. In-gong saw them, and Earth Quaker growled as In-gong formed a fist. Then In-gong cried out with the full power of Conquest!

"Below the King's Flag!"

Kwang!

Once again, there was a deafening sound. A brilliant flag of white light struck the ground, and the enormous power of Conquest pushed back Shutenberg's blue power. Green Wind, Locke, and Zephyr were also strengthened by the power of Conquest.

“Let’s go.”

In-gong declared, and Locke and Zephyr wielded their weapons.

The Death Knight looked into the distance, while Death smiled happily.

The War Knight approached the Death Knight.

The whole battlefield was crying. The huge swirl of magic power in the sky was emitting lightning, and Felicia was reminded of the vortex she had seen in Sky Forest.

The advent of Arch Lich Shutenberg affected the undead as well. They became stronger and more ferocious.

Rather than the fire barrier, Felicia dug into the ground and raised the earth. Every time the ground crumpled, the undead fell and trampled each other. They weren’t able to resist being crushed either as walls of earth formed.

However, there were too many undead. The reason why Felicia and the others kept on moving was not just to join Baikal. It was obvious that if they stayed still, they would be crushed by the wave of undead.

Caitlin and Vandal opened a path for the party at the front. After gaining the power of an apostle, Caitlin was like a typhoon. Every time she launched an attack, dozens of undead collapsed.

Considering the overwhelming difference in numbers, the party was overpowering.

When a huge bolt of lightning from Silvan disintegrated the undead in front of them, Felicia felt a sense of security. She wanted to praise her always reliable brother, but she kept it in her mind since she knew Silvan would go crazy if he heard it.

It was difficult for Felicia to keep changing the terrain while moving. She needed time to breathe for a moment. While she recovered her breath, Felicia’s gaze moved far

away. She saw the true center of the battlefield, which was much further away from the blue ice dragon.

Despite using far-seeing magic, she couldn't see it properly. All she knew was that a huge amount of aura and magic power were colliding with each other. It was clear that a terrifying battle was taking place. Maybe it was more terrifying than the fight against the demonic god in Sky Forest.

Felicia couldn't help shuddering. Anxiety and impatience ate away at her heart. Since the Red Lightning tribe subjugation, she had always been with In-gong. Despite being in the same space, this was the first time she wasn't able to see In-gong fight. Was In-gong okay? Could he win this time?

"Don't worry, it is Prince."

Carack came up to her and said. It was a relaxed tone that didn't fit the atmosphere of the battlefield.

Felicia turned to look at Carack. Instead of facing Felicia, Carack was smiling as he looked towards where In-gong was fighting.

"Yes, it's Shutra."

Felicia agreed. It was strange, but her heart felt lighter.

"Then let's get back to work. We don't want to be lazing around when Prince comes back."

"Yes."

At this moment, Felicia understood slightly why Delia had fallen for Carack. Felicia then took a deep breath, patted her cheeks lightly, and focused on her magic again. Carack grinned and raised his axe. There were still too many undead remaining.

The mercenary king, Carlov, was a mercenary like his title suggested. It wasn't an exaggeration to say that he had spent his whole life on the battlefield.

However, this was the first time he had seen a battlefield like this. There was an infinite number of approaching enemies, and there were allies who advanced while crushing those enemies...

This was truly the Demon World. While travelling through the Demon World, he had realized that the species of the Demon World were much more militant than the Human World. However, his true realization came on this battlefield. They displayed a tremendous combat power, worthy of being called the elite of the Demon World.

Some knights from the Human World would be unable to fight like the ones before him right now. In particular, the children of the demon king were amazing. Despite only been in their mid-teens to early 20s, their abilities were truly great.

Carlov whistled as he watched them. He wanted to fight together with Caitlin, who showed off the charm of a fighter, but his duty was to protect Beatrice.

Beatrice was praying with her eyes closed. Every time she sang, the divine aura around her became stronger. She wasn't the only saintess who was praying. Dark Saintess Altesia was also praying with the dark power of Erebus surrounding her.

Whether it was a coincidence or inevitability, the prayers of the two saintesses finished at the same time and they shouted loudly:

"Parents in heaven! Show your strength and illuminate this world with the glory of your light!"

"Believe!"

There was a big difference in their last cries, but fortunately, the gods of light and darkness loved their saintesses equally. The God of Light gave his daughter a miracle in response to her prayer, while the God of Darkness gave power to his youthful daughter.

A gleam of light shone from the sky filled with dark clouds. It was like a giant golden sword was splitting the earth and sky apart. The power of light was absolute. Any undead touched by the golden light was immediately turned to ashes, and tens of thousands of undead were evaporated from the battlefield in an instant.

The dark miracle descended as well. A darkness, which seemed to devour everything,

covered the sky and the earth. The darkness erased everything it swallowed, sweeping away everything in its path and leaving nothing in its place.

It was a huge feat which everyone in the demon king's army couldn't help admiring. This was natural since the miracle from the two saintesses had wiped out closed to 200,000 undead. Carlov quickly grabbed Beatrice who was about to fall down. Altesia also collapsed, and the Erebos knights by her side hastened to catch her.

Despite being bathed in sweat, the two saintesses were very satisfied and once again prayed to each god. Simultaneously, two people were feeling a great joy.

"Orabeoni!"

"Anastasia!"

Anastasia and Baikal smiled brightly as they found each other. Anastasia wanted to run into Baikal's arms, but the distance between the two of them was still great.

"Hyung-nim!"

Chris shouted sharply while filled with the power of wilderness. Then Baikal skillfully changed the course of his troops. Thanks to the miracle of the two saintesses, the surrounding undead had been swept away, so he didn't need to worry about the battle between the sword duke and winter king for a while. The sword duke's fight was something that couldn't even be imagined.

Currently, Caitlin was the best fighter amongst them, while Chris and Baikal fought on either side of her. Baikal was greatly confused by Caitlin's transformed appearance, but there was no time to talk about it.

"Wedge formation! Charge!"

Chris commanded, and Caitlin shot off. The entire army was like a huge arrow, with Caitlin being the very tip. Their goal was the center of the magic circle where a huge battle was taking place.

The sword duke and winter king didn't move while facing each other. It was the

confrontational phase after several fierce exchanges.

The winter king's reputation wasn't in vain. There would be none among the captains who could beat him; he really was the strongest beyond the limit line.

The winter king laughed wildly. There was joy and exultation in his eyes. They were the eyes of a person who enjoyed fighting against the strong. The sword duke smiled. He too enjoyed fighting against the strong. As someone had who walked the path of the sword for his whole life, this was a huge enjoyment for him.

However, it wasn't time to be immersed in his joy. The sword duke closed his eyes, and he took a deep breathe.

The princes were fighting Arch Lich Shutenberg. Originally, he was an enemy the sword duke was supposed to deal with. The new generation of hope would struggle to overcome Shutenberg's power.

The sword duke opened his eyes. It was the same with the winter king who sensed that the time had come.

The stillness which existed between the two people broke. The sword duke and winter king once again crossed swords.

A fierce battle was unfolding.

It wasn't an exaggeration to say that the fate of the Demon World was hanging on this battle.

It was as they thought.

This was intentional.

Arch Lich Shutenberg was strong. His magic power was comparable to the demonic god at Sky Forest.

Moreover, his magic power wasn't great due to absorbing the magic power of Sky Forest like the demonic god. Instead, his magic skills had been accumulated over 2,000 years of living and were enough to make Felicia and Anastasia look like children.

So, even though Locke and Zephyr fought together, Shutenberg was never caught off guard. In-gong did his best to fight against Shutenberg.

However, inside In-gong's soul, Conquest, the white woman wearing the golden crown, turned her attention elsewhere. She thought of those separate from Shutenberg.

The Death Knight and War Knight...

Where were they? Why hadn't they showed up at this moment?

The white woman lifted her head in the darkness. She had sacrificed many things to escape from her fate 1,000 years ago, and she was still incomplete. Therefore, she shouldn't have realized it.

However, the white woman had a hunch. She had realized something.

The Death Knight and War Knight faced each other. The knights didn't feel that much despite 1,000 years of separation.

However, Death and War were different. Since they lost their leader Conquest, the two felt deep emotions over being together once more. War, the red woman, embraced Death in the darkness. Death, the blue man, hugged the red woman back.

"Ahh."

The red woman was crying. She felt pure delight as she faced the blue man. The blue man was no different. Finally, he let go of his sister and stared across the darkness.

The Death Knight joined Death. He was 1,000 years old and different from the other Knights of the Apocalypse. The Death Knight could be called Death itself.

The War Knight turned his attention to the Death Knight. Death and War stood

together in the darkness and looked at the new battlefield.

Finally, the time had come. All those who would interfere were in the north. The Death Knight and War Knight took a step forward. Their gazes were focused on the new battlefield.

The Demon King's Palace...

It was the place where the man who protected the Demon World was located.

Chapter 214

Demon King

1,000 years ago...

There had been a species with a mighty civilization in the Demon World.

They were called the indigenous species.

The area was filled with the power of Death. Due to the miracles caused by the God of Light and the God of Darkness, hundreds of thousands of undead had been erased from the world, but there were still many remaining.

Shutenberg also had the power of Death, and a mighty blue aura emitted from his body. The man at Thunderdoom Fortress couldn't even compare with Shutenberg. In-gong sensed it intuitively... Arch Lich Shutenberg wasn't the Death Knight. He had received power from the Death Knight and was an apostle.

However, he was different from the other apostles. He had 1,000 years to build up the power of Death. Before he became an apostle of Death, he had been a powerful magician with barely any rivals.

Arch Lich Shutenberg used magic as naturally as he breathed. Every time his staff moved, a new spell enveloped the sky while the undead moved in a orderly fashion, in unison with his sword. Awful curses rained down from the sky. They were curses which weakened stamina, strength, and the spirit. There were also powerful curses which caused death or deprived someone of life.

The power of Conquest, branching out from the King's Flag, blocked the curses, but Shutenberg didn't hesitate to continue using them. It seemed he wanted to see how long In-gong and the others could endure the curses.

Shutenberg didn't just use curse magic. There were also direct magic attacks which

threatened In-gong's party. As an arch lich, every one of his magic spells was unimaginable. Hellfire sprang up from the ground, while blizzards swirled and several spheres were created, which erased what it touched.

Despite growing up in a temple, various curse words emerged from Warrior Locke's mouth. He destroyed the spheres using his divine power, then he used the Warrior's Sword to make dozens of aura light swords to protect himself as well as In-gong and Zephyr.

Zephyr used magic. Rather than attacking Arch Lich Shutenberg, he created a magic storm which disturbed all magic around it. It contributed to their defense by reducing or eliminating the power of Shutenberg's magic.

Locke and Zephyr were truly performing greatly. However, when one took a step back from the scene, they see that Locke and Zephyr were just doing their best to defend.

The undead cried out; it was the screaming of hundreds of thousands of enemies. Like both crying and singing, it was more than enough to cause the living people to feel despair and horror. Shutenberg didn't give any complicated orders to the undead. The command he gave the undead was simply to rush forward.

The undead climbed on top of each other, trying to swallow up In-gong, Zephyr, and Locke like angry waves. Every time Locke and Zephyr wielded their weapons, the undead broke like waves crashing against a breakwater. However, there were too many undead.

Locke and Zephyr couldn't think about attacking. Due to the unceasing number of undead, even Shutenberg became invisible.

As In-gong pushed through Shutenberg's curses, he was busy thinking. The white woman was very anxious about something, but the situation in front of him was so urgent that he didn't have time to worry about it.

Arch Lich Shutenberg was strong, but he wasn't the God of Death. His current brutal strength was due to the enormous magic circle covering the whole snowfield. It was just like when In-gong fought the demonic god at Sky Forest. He had to destroy the magic circle first.

Earth Quaker growled angrily. Then In-gong used Dragon Breath and destroyed the

undead in front of him. As the shattered bones were scattering, he heard Zephyr's voice,

'Save your power. Concentrate on defense rather than offense.'

Message magic. It was magic that was sent to Locke as well as In-gong.

'Buy some time. Prepare a powerful blow for when there is an opportunity.'

The message magic only conveyed a short instruction which didn't explain everything. Zephyr was collecting magic and aura for a strong blow while defending. He had also realized that the magic circle had to be destroyed in order to beat Shutenberg.

'But just defending? Isn't it better to dig into the center and attack the magic circle somehow?'

As Locke shared those thoughts, Zephyr shook his head and sent another message magic.

'Altesia will somehow do it.'

Locke frowned because he didn't know who Altesia was, but Zephyr didn't explain anymore. Attacks started to pour down on Locke again, so he wasn't able to ask more questions.

While In-gong used Dragon Words for defense, he was perplexed. It wasn't because Zephyr had mentioned Altesia instead of the other children of the demon king. He was perplexed because Zephyr seemed to smile slightly when he referred to Altesia.

'Smile? Zephyr? Saying a girl's name?'

It wasn't somebody else but Zephyr?

'Master!'

There was no time. In-gong poured his magic spells in Green Wind's direction.

Of course, it was hard to use magic while running. The damage was weak compared to when it was focused properly and the efficiency was poor.

However, Anastasia used almost perfect magic spells while running. It was because she was used to it after using 'faster than the wind' several times. When she thought about it, she had never imagined the situation of burning out of magic before meeting In-gong.

The magic which emerged from Anastasia was the wide area recovery magic necessary when she had been the battery for 'faster than the wind'. It was magic which not only healed wounds but also revitalized the body and cleansed the targets of fatigue.

With Caitlin in the lead, a new group joined the wedge formation and was smashing through the undead towards the magic circle. They were the knights from the Erebus Church as well as Altesia.

Altesia rode a Phantom Steed and approached Beatrice, who was being carried on Carlov's back. Although clearly exhausted, Altesia's eyes were shining like lanterns. Beatrice couldn't hide her confusion, and she felt some fear as Altesia came closer.

However, Beatrice was a saintess. She was revered as the incarnation of Mother Earth, so she quickly recovered and confronted Altesia.

The two saintesses recognized each other pretty quickly. Their gods were different, but both of them were greatly loved by their gods. The divine power which only the two of them could see looked like the full moon.

Altesia suddenly smiled widely. She brought the Phantom Steed closer to Beatrice and made it show off some tricks.

"Let's pray together! Shatter the magic circle!"

Beatrice's eyes widened. Then Altesia stood up straight and looked up at the sky.

"Will you help me?"

The God of Light was also the mother of all things. In response to Altesia's cry, a stream of golden light poured down from the sky and illuminated her. Like an actress in the

spotlight, Altesia laughed once again.

“We will be helped!”

“Oh?”

Beatrice was confused. Carlov, who was carrying Beatrice, was the same.

‘What?’

A light poured down in response to the cry of some random saintess?

‘No, that’s not right.’

Altesia was a saintess, but she was the saintess of another god! While Carlov was baffled, Altesia looked up at the sky again. She suddenly laughed and said in a bewitching voice,

“Aish, Erebus as well. Am I cheating on you? You’re jealous! But that is also charming! So good!”

What the hell was she saying? However, it couldn’t be ignored. Just like the golden light, a darkness poured down from the sky. Beatrice gave up thinking about it.

“Let’s pray together.”

Beatrice closed her eyes and Altesia nodded. The two saintesses prayed to their gods.



Two swords crossed. In the battlefield where the undead and soldiers were fighting, it was like another space.

There wasn’t his usual kindness on the sword duke’s face. His eyes penetrated through everything and only chased one thing.

At that moment, his sword cried out, and the noise filled the space distinctly.

The balance collapsed. The sword duke’s sword started to push back the winter king’s

sword.

“Amazing!”

Caitlin shouted from where she was running in the vanguard. Baikal smiled like he couldn't believe it, while Silvan looked like a child. Chris just sighed with admiration.

A miracle was happening as the two saintesses prayed together. The both of them were already exhausted from creating a miracle earlier, but they did this by drawing out all their stamina.

On the ground, the huge incarnation of a god rose up. It was so huge that it was dozens of meters in size, despite only having the upper half. A golden sword was shining brilliant in the black incarnation's hand. That sword was the incarnation of the God of Light.

The black incarnation roared and grabbed the sword of light. Then the force of the gods were released towards the ground. The sword of light exploded, and the brilliant golden colour covered the ground as a huge roar rang out.

The world was once again covered with light and darkness. Beatrice could no longer withstand it and fainted, while Altesia fell back on her Phantom Steed after letting out an unknown cry. She had also fainted.

However, the miraculous effect of the two saintesses was certain. A part of the huge magic circle covering the snowfield was now destroyed, and Felicia and Anastasia didn't miss this crack in the magic circle.

The two princesses cast their magic desperately. Baikal added his magic power to the two princesses, while Silvan didn't stay still either. The magic power of the fairy caused the crack in the magic circle to widen.

The magic was still alive, but it didn't function properly. The undead stumbled for a moment as their supply of magic power was disrupted. It was like the tremors of an earthquake were running through the snowfield as thousands of them collapsed at the same time.

The once overpowering flow of magic power was disrupted, and Green Wind realized that the wind had changed. It had to be now. The chance wouldn't come a second time.

Locke and Zephyr moved at the same time. The Warrior's Sword and Dragon Slayer released terrible auras.

Locke used the super special move of the Warrior's Sword. Meanwhile, Zephyr used the super special move of Dragon Strike.

There was one additional power which contained great destruction...

True Destruction.

Earth Quaker roared angrily.

Chapter 215

Demon King #2

It was something which couldn't have happened originally. The magic circle on the snowfield wasn't an ordinary magic circle.

Magicians usually surrounded their homes with powerful magic, and the magician would add various magic circles to increase their power by several times. Shutenberg had created this thousands of years ago. The magic circle had been created before Shutenberg's castle; it was a magic circle with a weight of over 3,000 years behind it.

Even with fairly powerful magic, it had been impossible to damage the outer parts of the circle. Since the magic circle wasn't drawn on the ground, they were forced to hit it with pure power. The reason why Zephyr had tried to dig into the center of the circle was because there was no other way to damage it.

Yet, the outer parts of that magic circle were now destroyed. It was truly a miracle which was possible only because there were two saintesses beloved by their gods.

In-gong and Locke realized it instinctively, and Zephyr also clearly understood. The miracle created by the incarnation of the two gods didn't end with just creating a crack in the magic circle. The magic circle was collapsing. It was like a domino falling down. The damage to the outside meant the inside would soon be destroyed.

Felicia and Anastasia accelerated the collapse. Due to the fact that it was such a huge magic circle, it would take some time to collapse. However, it was clear that a collapse was imminent.

The undead covering the snowfield stumbled. This was a precursor, and thus In-gong, Locke, and Zephyr moved. Arch Lich Shutenberg was also affected by the magic circle, so this was a chance. The cracks on the magic circle grew bigger. Light scattered and blended with the blizzard, while the rough winds drove the cries of the undead upwards.

Locke felt wonder. Throughout his whole life, he had never met anyone who was his

match. In the meantime, he had fought creatures several times with In-gong's party, but they had been easy fights.

However, their breathing was now in sync, and he could see what the other two people would do next. It was something he had never felt with Carlov and Beatrice.

A smile appeared on Locke's face. Knowing what the other two would do, he kicked off from the ground. Then he looked around as he inserted energy into the Warrior's Sword. Locke met another's gaze. 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros was doing the same thing. He grasped a white sword and was looking in Locke's direction

Both of them understood; they exchanged words with just their eyes. It was a strange feeling, but they didn't dislike it.

Locke and Zephyr didn't look back. They didn't pay attention to the third person who would play the most important role. It was baseless confidence, but the two of them didn't doubt it.

The first to attack was Zephyr. He went beyond the wall of the crumbling, leapt in the air, and used Dragon Strike. It was truly an overwhelming sight. A dragon's head made of magic power and aura roared, and light enveloped the world. This was a wide range attack and the reason why Zephyr had moved first. The undead between In-gong's group and Shutenberg were swept away. Along with the magic circle collapsing, a large hole was made.

Locke plunged into the light. It was hasty enough to seem like a self-destructive move, but the reality was different. It was the most accurate timing. The moment that the aftermath of Dragon Strike began to fade, Locke was in the center of the destruction. As Zephyr's light faded, Locke pierced the air.

A huge sword made of light was emitted from the tip of his sword. The mass of divine power and aura rushed toward Shutenberg.

Kwang!

With a violent roar, the Warrior's Sword was stopped in the air. To be precise, it was embedded in an invisible wall. Cracks formed in the air. The Warrior's Sword shook, and Locke didn't hesitate to swing it.

Kwakakakang!

A huge explosion occurred. The reason why it had occurred was simple: Shutenberg's chain of defense spells had been broken. Locke laughed. He once again felt a strange feeling. It was the first time he was leaving the final move to someone else.

"Go!"

He shouted excitedly. And with that sound, In-gong charged forward, using Wind Style to surpass the speed of the wind. In-gong broke through the crumbling defense and became mist. Then as he arrived in front of Shutenberg, his fist lunged out.

'True Destruction!'

Earth Quaker howled. The dragon blood flowing in In-gong's body roared with it.

This True Destruction was the most powerful one that In-gong had used so far. However, Shutenberg was the opponent, and he had already started preparing a powerful magic the moment the magic circle had started to collapse. Rather than defending against In-gong's destructive power, Shutenberg responded with the same destruction.

In-gong's fist came into contact with Shutenberg's sword, not Shutenberg. This was the result of Shutenberg reading the flow of magic power created by Blink. The power of True Destruction encased Shutenberg's sword, while the magic contained in Shutenberg's sword sought to destroy True Destruction.

Earth Quaker was enraged at such a challenge. As it cried out angrily, True Destruction started to overwhelm Shutenberg's attack, and the sword that Shutenberg held was quickly turned into pieces. The power of destruction continued to advance. At the same time, Shutenberg used several magic spells, and magic power poured from his staff toward In-gong.

Pepeng!

In-gong turned into dark blue fog again, while White Eagle and Black Eagle moved in front of In-gong to block the attacks. The power of the green light blocked Shutenberg's enchantments.

However, Arch Lich Shutenberg didn't let up. The wicked and aggressive magic hurt not only White Eagle and Black Eagle but Green Wind as well. Green Wind screamed with pain, while In-gong angrily moved more power into Earth Quaker.

However, Shutenberg still didn't stop generating new magic. The powerful curses seemed to break through the force field.

Locke and Zephyr didn't look. The two people were attacking the undead which had started to recover. Locke had dozens of small swords made from magic power and aura around him, while new spells formed in Zephyr's hands.

'Master!'

Green Wind cried out. However, it wasn't just a cry from pain. In-gong understood what Green Wind was saying. There wasn't much left. The undead pushing against them right now were the last flicker of a candle that was about to go out.

Kwaaaaaang!

The undead joined together and formed a giant hand. The giant hand rose high into the sky above In-gong's, Locke's, and Zephyr's heads.

"Shutra!"

Felicia shouted from far away. Caitlin hurled away all the undead which were blocking her eyes.

The Warrior's Sword created by Locke headed into the sky. Zephyr invoked magic on both his hands, while In-gong released his aura.

Then the giant hand hit the ground. There was a fierce tremor, and a brilliant light flashed. White Eagle and Black Eagle escorted In-gong from the remnants of the giant hand, while Locke and Zephyr escaped the wreckage simultaneously.

It was at this moment that...

The blizzard swirling started to head towards the sky. The crack in the magic circle finally reached the center, and the destruction began. Fragments of magic poured down from the sky. A tremendous amount of magic power was released as the undead

collapsed.

In-gong took deep breaths, while Zephyr called out urgently.

“It’s coming!”

In-gong’s group weren’t the only ones who had predicted the collapse of the magic circle. The moment the magic circle collapsed, Shutenberg invoked magic which could only be used once. The magic circle gathered the spirits of the undead. This was how the already broken undead could stand up and fight again.

The souls of the undead no longer had any reason to stay on this land once the magic circle was broken. However, they could do great harm...

And Shutenberg gave these souls a direction. The randomly scattering souls were caught in his magic power and turned into a strong current. Shutenberg’s staff aimed at In-gong’s party. At that moment, the hundreds of thousands of souls in the sky drew a huge trajectory and flew towards In-gong’s party!

Locke thought that last move had been the end. It was the same for Zephyr. Therefore, they didn’t even have time to think about blocking it. However, In-gong was different. He looked straight at the torrent of souls and lifted his right hand. He placed the tattered White Eagle and Black Eagle on his left arm and took a deep breath.

Locke and Zephyr saw In-gong’s intentions and moved towards him. In-gong grabbed the air and summoned a flag of light.

“Below the King’s Flag!”

He roared and struck the flag into the ground. At that moment, the huge torrent of souls swallowed up In-gong’s party.

Kwaaaaaang!

The power of Conquest rose from the flag of light, and In-gong didn’t budge before the torrent of souls. The torrent of souls split apart into two across the flag of light. Green Wind embraced In-gong from behind. Locke smiled at him, while Zephyr gulped.

The flag of the light shook, and In-gong groaned with pain. The white woman shouted,

‘Conquer!’

Kwang!

Then the torrent of souls ended. In-gong had endured until the end. There was nothing else. The souls scattered and no more torrent of magic power appeared in the snowfield.

Shutenberg stared at In-gong. In-gong glared at him, despite having exhausted an enormous amount of aura and magic power. Shutenberg’s skull seemed to smile. Locke and Zephyr swung their weapons at Shutenberg, and his arms were cut off. He then fell to his knees.

In-gong transformed the flag of light into a spear and threw it at Shutenberg’s chest, piercing through the lump of magic power in Shutenberg’s chest. Shutenberg didn’t fight it, and his body gradually started to collapse.

Felicia sat down with relief as she saw it from a distance. After witnessing several miracles, she prayed to the gods several times. Caitlin laughed loudly. As always, In-gong could be depended on.

However, Carack’s eyes then widened, and Anastasia had an ominous feeling. Zephyr and Locke attacked Shutenberg urgently. However, his body had already started to crumble, so there was no point destroying it quicker.

[Your level has risen.]

[Your level has risen.]

In-gong understood as he listened to the voice of the woman. The torrent of souls wasn’t Shutenberg’s last move. He was an apostle, a person who had received the power of the Death Knight. His mission was to wipe out everyone who was here. This was his mission for the Death Knight, who had been his master for 1,000 years.

“Freedom.”

Shutenberg whispered. The last spell was triggered by sacrificing Shutenberg's soul. The lump of magic power pierced by the spear wriggled. It shone with a blue light and started swelling; it was like looking at the artificial sun In-gong had created. Zephyr recognized it and was astonished as the blue gradually darkened.

This was a black sun...

A magic which could only be described as a disaster. In the past, when Shutenberg had been called the Half King, this destructive magic had erased the allied forces of five kingdoms from this world. The force had been enough to spread over dozens of kilometers. Even if they tried desperately to escape right now, they would not be able to leave the range of the destruction.

However, Arch Lich Shutenberg couldn't produce the black sun in such a short time. In his days as the Half King, he had invested at least a decade to produce the black sun. The land itself was a trap. Arch Lich Shutenberg had been thinking about self-destruction from the beginning.

It was a destruction worthy of the Death Knight. There was nothing which could stop Shutenberg's move.

Locke looked around for Beatrice hurriedly, while Zephyr wondered desperately if there was a way to reduce the magic aftermath or defend against it.

Anastasia also recognized the black sun, which was why she was desperate. Felicia knew about the black sun as well. Just like Zephyr, she tried to think of a way to stop it but couldn't come up with anything.

Time passed by, and the black sun became even bigger. It wasn't long until the time of its destruction. Then at that moment... just as everyone was thinking it was a disaster...

A single wind pierced through In-gong's group. In-gong laughed while his clothing was in tatters. It was only shortly after the fall of the winter king. Therefore, his whole body was messed up. Only half his usual aura remained.

However, he had to do something. The sword duke stared at the black sun. He closed his eyes and took a deep breath. The extreme nothingness reached by the demon king...

The sword duke hadn't reached it. However, he could imagine beyond that. It was possible to almost imitate it once in his life.

"Look carefully, Prince."

The sword duke ordered and then wielded his sword. An extreme nothingness spread out in front of In-gong.

There was a line above the black sun. It was an attempt to cut the power of destruction.

Those watching from afar were delighted, and Silvan yelled the sword duke's name. Locke and Zephyr, however, were different because they were closer. Indeed, the sword of the sword duke was truly beautiful. There was no arguing that it reached the extremes of his limit.

However, the fight with the winter king had made his sword blunt, and the sword duke couldn't destroy the black sun completely. The black sun collapsed. The original destructive power couldn't emerge, but it could at least wipe out this snowfield.

The sword duke coughed up blood. Zephyr and Locke sought to surround the black sun with their magic power and auras.

Then In-gong saw it. Green Wind whispered to In-gong. The white woman also passed her feelings onto In-gong. He had done this before. The scale and form were different, but the essence was the same.

In-gong reached out towards the black sun. To Locke and Zephyr's shock, the power of Conquest was revealed. It was like when In-gong conquered the Thunder Light Anvil. The enormous power of the black sun couldn't be compared to that time, but In-gong's power of Conquest had also strengthened.

Green Wind once again called to In-gong. She embraced In-gong from behind and conveyed her strength. The white woman smiled at In-gong.

'Punishment, obedience, governance.'

This was the power of Conquest.

In-gong roared.

A pure white light enveloped the black sun.

The demon king raised his head.

Even those who could read the flow of fate couldn't foresee the future. However, he understood... The time had finally come.

He had to defend it.

The demon king smiled just as 3rd Queen Sylvia's face appeared on the telecommunications device. The demon king looked towards the north, then he slowly raised his body from the throne.

His sword cried wildly.

Chapter 216

Demon King #3

Night was approaching. The cold darkness had come.

The Death Knight closed his eyes and welcomed the night. As he took a deep breath, cold air filled his lungs.

The connection with Arch Lich Shutenberg had been broken. The destruction of his older apostle gave the Death Knight a great deal of emptiness, but the Death Knight didn't dwell on it. It was within the assumed range of possibilities. Even if Shutenberg died, it was enough if the black sun was activated properly.

The Death Knight took a breath again, consciously driving everything else out from his mind. He was aware of how foolish it was to have lingering attachments.

1,000 years had passed. The day in which everything had changed was too far in the past, so it was okay. The weight of time would protect him.

The Death Knight barely suppressed the old memories of loss and opened his eyes. The night view of the calm Demon King's Palace was visible at a glance.

Death urged him on, while War laughed at the thought of the fight that would take place now.

The Death Knight raised his sword.

The blizzard didn't stop. The snow which headed into the sky started to cover the ground again after the collapse of the magic circle.

Anastasia, who had closed her eyes tightly against the explosion, opened them again. She sighed with relief as the landscape in front of her hadn't changed. As the tension in her legs relaxed, they lost strength, and Anastasia fell onto the snow. She stretched

her shoulders several times and sighed with relief, using the last of her determination to not fall down.

The black sun hadn't exploded, and the power of destruction didn't cover the snow.

What had happened? It was hard to imagine the natural collapse of the magic. Arch Lich Shutenberg had used the last of his life to cast the spell. It was more sophisticated than the large magic circle he made, but it was hard to imagine him having made a mistake with the spell.

At that moment, Felicia stood up from her position a little bit ahead of Anastasia. She staggered like she had no strength in her legs, but her face was filled with joy.

"Shutra."

Felicia mumbled and smiled like a fool. The despair she felt when she saw the black sun had been too great. Her heart pounded and her cheeks turned red. She didn't know for sure what had happened, but she could grasp the situation.

In-gong had blocked the black sun. She didn't know what he had used, but she was sure of it. It was Shutra, truly Shutra.

Her cheeks puffed up as her urge to see In-gong grew bigger. She couldn't stand it anymore.

"Your Highness."

"You will fall. Be careful."

Delia and Carack approached and helped Felicia up. Delia couldn't help smiling warmly and said in a small voice, "Isn't it good?"

However, Felicia didn't hear it.

As always, Carack was smiling. Felicia felt relieved just seeing that smile. She had never imagined that she would feel relief when looking at the face of an orc, but just like In-gong was In-gong, Carack was also Carack.

How had In-gong stopped the black sun? Her curiosity as a magician raised its head,

but her urge to go and hug In-gong was stronger.

“Shutra is amazing.”

Felicia tried to imitate Caitlin. Delia raised her eyebrows at the unexpected words, but Felicia didn't care. In-gong was truly amazing.

She took one step and then another one. Although the souls of the undead had been liberated, it was hard to accelerate because of the snow. In the end, Carack offered to help the frustrated Felicia. Despite her feelings for Carack, even Delia thought it was rude, but Felicia nodded readily. Her heart sped up even more as she saw Caitlin and Chris in front of him.

‘Embrace him tightly. Embrace him tightly. Bury my head in Shutra's chest. And then...’

Felicia became shy as she imagined something. Despite the chill from beyond the limit line penetrating into her bones, her red face showed no signs of cooling down at all. When Felicia finally reached him, she jumped down from Carack's back and barely held back her scream.

Delia followed the direction of Felicia's gaze, and they froze in place.

“Shutra! Shutra!”

Warrior Locke appeared in their sights, and Zephyr was standing next to him. Chris stood by his side, while Caitlin was on the ground and shouting angrily. In-gong's figure couldn't be seen at all. No, In-gong's always smiling figure couldn't be found.

Felicia staggered forward. She almost fell over a few times, but she couldn't stop. In-gong was collapsed in front of Caitlin. His face was pale like he was dead.

“Unni, Unni. Shutra!”

Caitlin cried out as she noticed Felicia approaching. She could barely speak properly. Felicia closed her eyes and breathed heavily as her heartbeat sped up even more. His face was white.

Carack rushed over to In-gong and touched his hands and arms. Felicia also touched

him with trembling hands. His hands and feet were very cold. On the other hand, his chest was burning hot. In In-gong's body, magic power was leaking out. His aura was no different. There seemed to be a big hole somewhere.

Felicia was stunned. She could see why Caitlin was crying with despair while holding onto In-gong's arm. Caitlin was connected to In-gong through the Moonlight Core and Sunlight Core. Therefore, she knew it better than anyone else.

In-gong was dying. His life was leaking out like sand slipping through her fingers. It wasn't just a simple trauma; his soul itself was damaged. Almost all the rings connecting his soul to his body were cut off.

Recovery magic was useless. Despite knowing this fact, Felicia still used a recovery spell. Nevertheless, there was no change. Caitlin cried even more after seeing Felicia use her magic.

"What is happening?"

Felicia muttered. There was no answer, and Felicia closed her eyes tightly. She screamed,

"What is going on?"

Felicia cried. She couldn't hold back the tears.

"Green Wind! Green Wind! Do you know? Answer me! Green Wind!"

She shouted desperately, but there was no reply. There was no response from White Eagle which was lying next to In-gong. Felicia had always felt the power of Green Wind, but she couldn't feel anything there anymore.

"Unni, what should we do?"

Caitlin asked. Felicia couldn't give Caitlin an answer. She just touched In-gong's cool cheeks with trembling hands.

"Shutra, it's Noona. Open your eyes, Shutra. Shutra!"

He had defeated Arch Lich Shutenberg, and he had blocked the black sun. In-gong had

created a miracle as always, so she thought he would come back smiling like always.

‘Then why? Why?!’

Felicia’s body was seething with magic power. It was a result of her magic power’s reaction to her deep sadness and anxiety. If this continued, then Felicia could also be in danger. Locke and Chris, who maintained their calm, were about to speak, but Carack was one step ahead of them.

“Calm down. Calm down, Princess.”

Carack grabbed Felicia’s hand. Felicia gazed at Carack with eyes full of tears, while Carack smiled at her.

“Prince is still alive. He hasn’t died yet. He won’t die so easily. I can feel it. Can Princess feel it as well?”

“The King’s Knights.”

Felicia responded to it. She understood what Carack meant. Caitlin had a link between the Moonlight Core and Starlight Core, but Felicia was a member of the King’s Knights and Carack’s words were true. In-gong hadn’t died yet. He was still alive. He was persistently holding onto the string of life.

In-gong hadn’t given up. So, Felicia couldn’t give up either. Somehow, she had to find a way to revive In-gong.

Caitlin also tried to stop crying. Carack pulled out a handkerchief from somewhere and handed it to her. Chris, who wasn’t part of the King’s Knights, urgently asked if there was a way. Anastasia, who came late, almost stopped breathing after seeing In-gong, and Baikal closed his eyes tightly.

Felicia thought desperately. The first thing that came to mind were the two saintesses. They could create miracles using the power of the gods... Could that power save In-gong?

Felicia turned her head and looked at Zephyr. His face was a little darker and harder than usual. It was too much. Seeing this, Felicia was reminded of Zephyr’s personality.

‘No, maybe. Maybe.’

Would Zephyr use this opportunity to let In-gong die? Was he going to just watch?

It was a bad idea, so she didn’t want to believe it. She wanted to maintain a string of hope. Zephyr closed his eyes, while Felicia opened her mouth to try and appeal to his sympathies. Then at this moment...

“I know a way to save Prince.”

“Sword Duke!”

Silvan and Chris shouted at the same time. The sword duke was very tired after cutting the black sun. Therefore, the sword duke was in a much weaker state than usual. His mouth was red from the numerous times he had coughed up blood. As he caught his breath, he barely managed to speak.

“However, I’m not the one who can do it. Even the Dark Saintess can’t revive 9th Prince.”

The sword duke had witnessed everything. In-gong had controlled the black sun. It was a black sun which had been weakened by the sword duke, but it was still amazing.

However, as a result, In-gong’s soul was twisted. There was a large hole in his soul which was impossible to heal with simple recovery magic. Since In-gong’s origin was a gandharva god, it was difficult to heal him without the divinity of another god. This wasn’t simply treating a trauma... However, using a different divinity was likely to make the condition worse.

“I have a plan.”

The sword duke squeezed his sword. It was hard for him to take a step, let alone talk.

“Princess should already know.”

The explanation was lacking, but the two people connected to In-gong knew it instinctively. Both Felicia and Caitlin knew In-gong’s birth secret, and that’s why they were able to infer the correct answer.

“Go to the gandharva. Only they can save Prince.”

It was the gandharva who had originally planted the seed of divinity in In-gong. So, they must have a way to restore In-gong's divinity. The moment the sword duke finished speaking, Zephyr suddenly reached out to In-gong. Locke and Chris both reacted, but fortunately, it wasn't an attack magic.

Zephyr's magic power enveloped In-gong's body. Felicia looked up at Zephyr and asked hesitantly,

“Zephyr orabeoni?”

Zephyr frowned at Felicia's uneasy voice and explained,

“It is a magic that stops time. It is just a temporary measure, but it should be able to buy him some time.”

A small smile appeared on Caitlin's face. Felicia bit her lip and looked at Zephyr. She felt sorry that she had doubted him. No matter what, Zephyr was In-gong's brother.

Chris was still suspicious, but Baikal was very relieved. He was the one who felt the greatest joy at Zephyr's action.

However, Locke looked at Zephyr with a complicated expression. It was because he had read a small hesitation in Zephyr's actions. There had been a small moment of distress in Zephyr's eyes just before he activated the magic. Maybe the first thing he prepared hadn't been time stopping magic but attack magic.

However, it was the time stopping magic that Zephyr eventually used. Therefore, Locke didn't make any comments.

“Sword Duke, do you know where the gandharva are confined?”

Anastasia recovered after hearing there was a way to save In-gong and asked carefully. There was hardly anyone who knew the location of the gandharva after they were imprisoned by the sword duke.

“I know. We can't go there the usual way, so I will guide... kuk.”

While the sword duke was replying, he coughed up blood. The sword duke had used up all his energy against the winter king and the black sun. Although it wasn't as bad as In-gong's state, the sword duke's aura flow was also a mess.

The sword duke was in a precarious state, and he couldn't afford to guide the party quickly. However, the sword duke was the only one who could guide the party to the gandharva. Therefore, Chris and Silvan couldn't tell him to rest.

"No, there is one more person who knows the location of the gandharva."

Carack said suddenly. Everyone looked back at Carack who pointed to the succubus rushing towards them. It was a familiar face to Felicia and Caitlin.

Nayatra...

It was her.

Chapter 217

Demon King #4

Unlike the children belonging to 'Shutra's faction', Anastasia didn't know In-gong's birth secret. However, the sword duke showed no signs of doubt that In-gong could be restored by going to the gandharva.

The species had similar appearances and could mix together, but in the end, they were all different. The succubi all had similar bodies, so she thought it was the same for the gandharva. Moreover, this was the sword duke. She would've believed it even if the story was more absurd. The sword duke had that type of reliable presence for the children of the demon king.

Instead of wasting time on unnecessary doubts, Anastasia took immediate action. After opening a shield to stop the cold and blizzard, she looked at the time stopping magic Zephyr had used on In-gong. Zephyr had truly used time stopping magic, and according to his words, he had bought some time.

Meanwhile, Felicia started treating the sword duke. Thanks to In-gong, she was an expert at recovery magic. The sword duke's aura was in a twisted state, but compared to In-gong, it was an ordinary symptom. She performed as much first aid as she could.

While Felicia healed the sword duke, the children of the demon king were doing different things.

Chris ordered Caitlin to look at the status of the two saintesses. They were exhausted from using powerful miracles twice in a row. Additionally, it seemed good to give Caitlin something to do for now.

Silvan moved along with Caitlin. Once the plan was decided, it was necessary to take care of the troops. An intense battle had just finished, but the troops couldn't rest well in this freezing weather.

Chris stared at the backs of the two people as they left together before approaching the sword duke, who was already accompanied by Baikal and Zephyr.

“The winter king has been brought down.”

The sword duke said painfully. Chris only knew that the sword duke had been fighting a powerful being, so his eyes widened with surprise. The winter king was the king of the northern barbarians. Dealing with him was the biggest reason why the captains had been dispatched to the Aegis Gate.

Yet the winter king had just been just killed in battle. For the demon king’s army, that was really good news. There was a possibility that the plan for the demon king’s deployment to the Aegis Gate would be completely cancelled.

The sword duke tried to restore his breathing and closed his eyes like he was falling unconscious. Then he opened them again and said,

“I will go to the gandharva with 9th Prince. I don’t think I will wake up for a while... So, please do the rest.”

“I understand, Sword Duke. You can rest now.”

Baikal said lightly, causing the sword duke to nod slowly and close his eyes. As soon as the sword duke closed his eyes, he immediately lost consciousness. Felicia noticed Baikal’s concern and explained the sword duke’s status.

“It is okay, he is just sleeping. His body is in this state so that it can recover.”

It seemed like the sword duke wouldn’t be opening his eyes for a few days. Beside him, there was someone else who could lead them to the gandharva.

Indara sighed with relief as he approached. He bowed to the children of the demon king and carefully examined the sword duke. It was the first time that Baikal had met Indara, but Chris and Felicia allowed him to see the sword duke, so Baikal didn’t feel any distrust.

“We should hurry. I am concerned about Shutra.”

“Yes, Orabeoni.”

Felicia smiled with difficulty through a face covered with tears and headed back to In-

gong, who Carack, Vandal, and Nayatra had gathered around. Baikal looked at them before shifting his gaze away towards where Locke was standing still while watching In-gong.

“Chris, I’m sorry. but can I ask for an introduction?”

Baikal hadn’t seen that person before, so he decided to ask Chris. Chris looked at Locke and started explaining directly instead of calling out to him.

“His name is Locke. It seems that he is a warrior from the Human World. He joined us over the limit line.”

“Warrior? A warrior from the Human World?”

Baikal asked with amazement, while Zephyr looked like he already knew it. Chris looked between the two people and nodded.

“Yes, a mighty warrior. He said that he came to make sure the fight in the Demon World doesn’t spill over to the Human World.”

“The fight? The one with Shutenberg?”

“Something similar. The people with him are the Saintess and the Mercenary King.”

Arch Lich Shutenberg had showed tremendous abilities in the previous life. Although he had built up the magic in this land for many years, the fact that he had managed to create the magic circle in the first place proved his greatness.

Moreover, Shutenberg had mobilized the winter king for this battle, which meant that Shutenberg had a close connection to the northern barbarians. If Shutenberg had summoned all the northern barbarians here, then it would’ve been a much bigger fight.

“Saintess and Mercenary King...”

Baikal’s gaze moved towards the warrior’s companions.

Baikal might have had a gentle nature, but he wasn’t foolish, nor did he trust easily. Unlike Chris who had spent several days with the warrior, Baikal lacked the materials

to judge him. He didn't know if he could trust the warrior or not. Could he leave his younger siblings unattended with this warrior?

There was no Shutra right now, so there was no one among Shutra's group who could stop the warrior. The battle against Shutenberg proved that the warrior was much stronger than Chris. However, Baikal decided to have faith. It was a unique situation, but he also trusted Chris' eyes.

"Unfortunately, I'll have to postpone meeting them until next time."

The best thing was to move together, but that was unreasonable. At this point, the party would have to scatter.

"Chris, Shutra and the sword duke... as well as Felicia and Caitlin, please look after them. I have to return to the Aegis Gate and inform the captains about the situation.

"Yes, Hyung-nim."

It was as Chris had expected. The flow of magic power beyond the limit line was so violent that telecommunication magic was extremely difficult to use. Someone had to go to the north to pass on the situation to the captains.

"Zephyr, what will you do?"

"I will go back to the north."

Zephyr replied quickly. His response was also as expected, so Baikal just smiled. He wanted to entrust escorting In-gong's group to Zephyr. Although he trusted Chris' eyes, he still worried about his younger siblings. In-gong was currently collapsed, so Zephyr was the only one who could go against the warrior.

'And it is really surprising.'

Baikal had heard that In-gong had become stronger, but he had never imagined it would be by this much. He had only seen the fight from a distance, but he could tell with one glance; In-gong was currently on par with Zephyr's strength. Maybe he was even stronger.

Baikal was reminded of the In-gong—Shutra—he had seen last year. It was a big

change, but Baikal had almost no contact with In-gong previously. At most, it was just a few presents once a year.

As Baikal closed his eyes, he organized his thoughts on In-gong's strength. Even if the talent had blossomed late, it was a tremendous growth. However, there were more urgent things to think about right now.

Baikal took his troops and moved towards the Aegis Gate, while Chris returned to Caitlin without any delay.

Zephyr stood alone and stared at the spot where the black sun had disappeared. Then he turned around and looked at In-gong's party. The succubus, who knew the location of the gandharva, was standing next to Vandal with an expression of worry.

She looked somehow familiar, and Zephyr felt a strange connection to her, like when he saw Vandal or Sektum. Zephyr's gaze moved a little further away. It was at Locke. He was also looking at Zephyr.

A warrior of the Human World...

Locke was an unexpected variable, but instead of feeling reluctance, Zephyr welcomed him. He had been a great help in the fight against Shutenberg.

Zephyr closed his eyes. He took a deep breath and suppressed his doubts about In-gong. The power In-gong had shown during the fight against Shutenberg certainly resembled the power of Death and War, but it was also different. Maybe it was just a groundless anxiety.

Death and War... That was the only way to describe the energy and the gazes which had always been looking at him from the north.

Zephyr opened his eyes abruptly, then he looked towards the north. He didn't feel any gazes. It was possible that their power had been pushed away by the violent vortex of magic power. So, it wasn't unusual to not feel their gazes.

However, Zephyr felt anxious, and he remembered the aura of Death around Shutenberg. He had always felt their gazes during a big fight, yet he hadn't felt anything in this one.

Why? Was it really because he was beyond the limit line?

Zephyr turned instinctively, and his gaze headed south.

The Demon King's Palace was huge. It was also the strongest city in the Demon World and was protected by high and thick walls. The Demon King's Palace had never been invaded, and nobody had ever dared attack the palace.

However, that was now a story of the past.

The Demon King's Palace was burning. The power of War swelled and grew into a force which devoured the entire Demon King's Palace. Thanks to the height of the flames, the black sky was turning red.

The War Knight walked among the flames, with War always by his side. In the midst of the burning world, War closed her eyes. The red woman counted calmly.

'500 years.'

That was the duration of the Demon King's Palace's history. Compared to 1,000 years, it was too short.

Since waking up after nearly 1,000 years ago, the red woman had observed the Demon King's Palace. So, she was sure of it.

The tradition of the Sanctuary had been disconnected. It was natural that it hadn't been able to continue for 1,000 years.

Shouting rang out in the distance. Compare to those who guarded the walls, these people were strong. They were obviously the guardians of the Demon King's Palace. Maybe the demon king's royal guards had started to move.

The War Knight raised his sword slowly. The red woman hugged herself in the darkness and groaned. However, it wasn't because of the fighting that would soon begin, nor was it due to fear of the upcoming bloody battle.

The red woman felt it, and she was thrilled. With envious eyes, she looked at the Black

Castle, which was called the true Demon King's Palace.

The one who protected the Demon World...

The strongest person in the Demon World...

He was approaching.

Chapter 218

Demon King #5

The Death Knight took a step forward. He stood alone among the flames and screams coming from every direction.

The Death Knight and War Knight weren't the only ones attacking the Demon King's Palace. Many troops had been prepared for today. The apostles of War were raging everywhere. They were those who lived for war, so the battlefield was the only place where they could feel this pleasure.

There were also the apostles of Death. Every one of them was old, and some of them had lived even longer than Arch Lich Shutenberg.

The Death Knight raised his sword, which was already covered with blood. The Death Knight's sword was enveloped in the power of Death, so all the dead were reborn as undead which hated the living. It was thanks to the power of Death that the Demon King's Palace became so chaotic in such a short period of time.

It was a horrible chain where the mother bit the child and then the child bit the father. The Death Knight recalled the past. Even though a long time had passed, the memories still remained clear in his head. He remained silent as he gazed at the scene he had created with his own hands.

There wasn't much left. He had exhausted everything in today's fight.

The Famine Knight had disappeared before even joining them. Then Arch Lich Shutenberg and the winter king had disappeared beyond the limit line along with the Conquest Knight, the warrior, and the other children of the demon king.

The attack on the Demon King's Palace was using the last of the Death Knight's forces. He had no more troops. It would be foolish to take a step back.

The Four Knights of the Apocalypse desired the destruction of the world, not the collapse of the Demon King's Palace. The Demon King's Palace was just a single city.

Its disappearance wouldn't cause the whole of the Demon World to collapse.

It would just cause confusion. Since the focal point of the demon world was gone, there would clearly be an uproar. The Death Knight hoped the war between species would happen again.

However, that was still far from destruction.

Even if Arch Lich Shutenberg disappeared with the other children of the demon, 3rd Prince Victor still remained in the west. There were also children of the concubines who were performing missions outside the Demon King's Palace.

Additionally, the queens were outside the palace. 1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros remained at the Demon King's Palace, but there was a big difference between her and the other queens. The 1st Queen was the daughter of King Zanskal of the draconians, while the other queens were the leaders of their species. Harming the 1st Queen was different from harming the others.

It would be inefficient and stupid to waste his remaining forces on attacking the Demon King's Palace just for a slight chance of restarting the Era of Struggle. Rather, it would be more effective to raise the northern barbarians along with the winter king and Shutenberg.

Nevertheless, the Death Knight attacked the Demon King's Palace. Despite everything else, he tried to erase the Demon King's Palace from the world. However, it wasn't due to a personal grudge, and it was far from clinging to an obsession.

This was necessary. Everything he had done so far would end with the destruction of the Demon King's Palace.

Feeling what the War Knight felt, the Death Knight paused for a second and took a deep breath. A certain person was approaching. Instead of fleeing the Demon King's Palace, he had chosen to fight.

He was the king—the Demon World's protector.

It was something the Death Knight had hoped for, but he couldn't help feeling a little bit of bitterness. He both admired and despised the demon king for his devotion.

Then the Death Knight stepped forward again. It was time to settle this.

Four of the five captains of the Demon King's Palace were in the north.

Reinhardt, a yaksha and the only remaining captain, was furious at the sight of the scene at the Demon King's Palace. As befitting of his nickname 'the Silent Knight', he didn't speak. He simply rushed toward the War Knight as flames covered the red armour on the War Knight's body.

It was at that moment that Reinhardt discovered that the opponent was a woman. However, he didn't have any problems with that.

With every stroke, Reinhardt tried to smash her. He was a yaksha and several times bigger than the red woman in front of him. Rather than a sword, he wielded a greatsword which contained a huge blunt force.

The War Knight received Reinhardt's sword. As soon as it was blocked, her sword moved to the side of Reinhardt's sword, seeming to slip down along its side smoothly.

Reinhardt's sword soon landed on the ground. The War Knight was silent, but War laughed. Then she sped up.

The movements of the War Knight became faster and faster, and the crescent sword curved toward Reinhardt's throat.

Simultaneously, flames burst out everywhere. The apostles of War, riding on fire, rushed towards the guards.

It had started with the removal of the guardians around the Demon World. Numerous guardians had been killed, and by the time the Demon King's Palace had noticed the guardians were being hunted, half of the target number had already been achieved.

The transformation of lands into deserts or wilderness was merely an additional effect as the goal wasn't the devastation of the Demon World.

What were the guardians in the first place? Why had the lands been devastated after the disappearance of the guardians?

The reason for the latter was simple.

The Demon World was originally a land where people couldn't live, and it had become like this due to the red dragon. This wasn't devastation. It was just giving a glimpse of the Demon World's original appearance.

If so, who had created the present Demon World? Who had put a shell over the ravaged world? Moreover, if it wasn't for the sake of destruction, why had the Death Knight peeled off the shell?

There was one more meaning to the shell...

The fact that the Demon King's Palace was being attacked spread quickly. In addition to the three queens outside the castle, the four captains in the north also heard about the urgent situation.

However, the transportation formations didn't activate. They had been destroyed before they could even be used. The first job of the Death Knight's underlings was to destroy the transportation formations.

The three queens showed different actions. 3rd Queen Sylvia hurried to the Demon King's Palace. Since the transportation formation of the palace wasn't in action, she wanted to use the one nearest to the Demon King's Palace.

4th Queen Elaine wasn't in a better situation. She also wanted to head to the palace in a hurry, but she was outdoors, not at the palace of the lycanthropes. Elaine didn't love the demon king, but she didn't hate him; she simply thought it was for the best that he rule over the entire Demon World.

Elaine sped up along with her Blood Companions. Their goal was a transportation formation close to the Demon King's Palace.

2nd Queen Titania Nekrion didn't rush. She remained calm despite hearing that she couldn't move directly to the Demon King's Palace through the transportation

formation. It wasn't because she was cold-blooded or not worried about the demon king.

Among the queens, she was the one who believed in the demon king's strength the most. Thus, she was able to keep a calm state despite the Demon King's Palace being attacked.

The three queens were leading their armies towards the palace in their own way. The problem was whether they would make it in time.

The red dragon and elder dragons had been annihilated in the fight more than 10,000 years ago. After that, the Four Riders of the Apocalypse had suffered such big damage that they slept for thousands of years.

Then in the battle 1,000 years ago, the Four Riders of the Apocalypse and the new elder dragons had met. It had been unfair.

Recorder Torres had used some wickedness to deceive Conquest. Additionally, there had been a crucial difference between the two fights.

The red dragon... It was the dragon of extinction which had led the Four Riders of the Apocalypse. The elder dragons had been replaced by new ones, and the numbers filled up again. The riders had returned as well.

However, the red dragon hadn't returned. The red dragon alone had been completely freed from this world.

Why? What was the reason?

The difference between the two fights wasn't just the red dragon. One more difference existed...

And the Death Knight knew what it was.

10,000 years ago, the Death Knight had been the king of the indigenous species.

He had been the ruler of the Demon World and the father of the people. The king had done his best to fight against the red dragon and the Four Riders of the Apocalypse. No one could deny his struggle.

However, eventually, he had been defeated. The king had been caught by the Four Riders of the Apocalypse and had to watch his people die.

Although defeated, he had still been the most powerful warrior and magician of the indigenous species. Death had then turned the king into his knight, and the king of the indigenous species became the Death Knight and slaughtered his own people.

All of that had worn his spirit down. In the end, the only thing left had been a shell of the former king.

The indigenous species hadn't despaired over losing their king and continued the desperate resistance. The six elder dragons with the powers of the gods had fought with the indigenous species.

A long battle had ensued which then devastated the entire Demon World. At the end of the fight, the indigenous species had been completely destroyed. They hadn't been wiped out because they had been embroiled in the fight. There was no way that one species could be destroyed so completely.

The indigenous species of the Demon World had cast the ultimate magic to defend the Demon World, so all of the indigenous species died at the same time on the same day. Their souls had united together into a mighty power.

This power had decided the last fight. It had prevented the red dragon, whose soul had been destroyed by the Drakon Kechatulla, from resurrecting in this world.

The entire Demon World was covered with the magic of abundance. One of the new elder dragons born after the great war, Watcher Ainkel, imitated the magic of the indigenous species and enriched Enger Plains.

Simultaneously, the magic of abundance was also a seal. Every spell of abundance in an area was one seal.

There were hundreds of barriers between the Demon World and the place where the

red dragon's soul was expelled to.

Over time, the significance of the abundance became larger than the seal. In the first place, the indigenous species had placed more weight on that side. The abundance had been a solution to the problems which they had been facing right then, rather than worrying about the red dragon.

As years passed by, the people slowly forgot about the seals. Even the abundance had been incomplete when it was handed down through guardians.

The Death Knight had destroyed the seals slowly over a long period of time. It wasn't necessary to destroy all of the seals. He just needed to weaken the seals so that the red dragon could use its own power to break the barrier.

The War Knight had started her activities in earnest and helped the Death Knight. After making trouble in various places and driving away the attention of the gazes of those in the Demon King's Palace, the Death Knight destroyed the seals on the far side and prepared to call the red dragon.

There were strong and weak seals. Sometimes the seals were in the form of things other than abundance magic.

The Death Knight had caused the ghost of the fairy king to run wild. As a result, the seal that the fairy king held had been destroyed by the children of the demon king. One powerful seal had disappeared along with the magic fog that covered Sky Forest.

The goal had been achieved. Thanks to that, the Death Knight started moving. He exposed the home of Arch Lich Shutenberg to bring all the powerful variables there.

The sword duke, whom the Death Knight and War Knight didn't know when and where he could appear, turned towards the limit line. The Conquest Knight and Drakon Kechatulla of the Human World were also with him. Additionally, there was 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros.

The captains were gathered at the Aegis Gate. Predicting their movements was as easy as staring into the palm of his hand.

The last thing was the Demon King's Palace. Thus, the Death Knight had risen from his throne and headed there. However, the goal wasn't the Demon King's Palace. The

Demon King's Palace was just a place. There was something else which should be deleted from the world.

“Protector of the Demon World.”

It was the demon king. The demon king wasn't the ruler of the Demon World; he was the one who protected it. The first demon king had ended the Era of Struggle. He had been the guardian of the Sanctuary. Although he had traveled outside the Sanctuary to wage war during the Era of Struggle, his true role hadn't changed.

The demon king himself was the most powerful seal. He wasn't simply a guardian but the source of the Sanctuary's strength.

This was why the strongest person had to be the demon king. Therefore, the demon king was the guardian of the Demon World.

The Demon King's Palace was burning. Flames rose into the night sky, and the screams of those dwelling in the palace could be heard as the sounds of fighting rang out.

The Death Knight gave strength to the hand holding his sword, and the power of Death exploded out! The colour of death was blue, and that dark blue energy swallowed up the surrounding area. Simultaneously, the apostles of Death appeared. Their goal was the same.

The current demon king... the sura king, Mitra...

He had made his way straight to this place like he knew who was responsible for everything. The sword in his hand cried out wildly.

The aura of Death was like a great snake as it tried to swallow the demon king. The various aura, magics, and psychic powers of the apostles of Death headed toward the demon king simultaneously.

The guards behind the demon king couldn't respond properly. They were overwhelmed by the power of Death and could only watch.

The Death Knight stared at what was before him, while the demon king faced the Death Knight from a distance away. Then he wielded his sword towards all the malice in front of him.

It was just one swing, but it wasn't an ordinary swing. The sword cut through the air and crushed the power of Death. All the auras, magics, and psychic powers heading toward the demon king disappeared. It was like the world itself had been cut apart.

The apostles of Death gulped. The guards were also overwhelmed by the absolute power of the demon king.

After watching this scene, the Death Knight understood and was convinced of something. He could only acknowledge it after watching this scene. It was the reason why he had to remove all the external variables, including the sword duke.

It was because of the strongest person in the Demon World...

And what that meant.

The demon king swung his sword one more time.

Chapter 219

Demon King #6

In-gong opened his eyes. It was dark. Although the sky and the earth was dark, In-gong could see himself clearly; he was dressed in the white clothing he frequently wore in everyday life. He didn't see any of the equipment from the elder dragons, such as White Eagle and Earth Quaker. Additionally, he was barefoot.

'For sure...'

In-gong had used the power of Conquest to defeat Arch Lich Shutenberg's black sun, and he couldn't remember anything after that.

He thought he had died, but he then shook his head. His attempt to save everyone hadn't been unsuccessful. Moreover, this space was very familiar to In-gong. It was the first time he had entered it, but he had seen it several times.

In-gong turned around slowly. As expected, a woman with white hair and a golden crown was standing before him.

It was the first time they had faced each other in this space. In-gong approached the white woman, who was slightly shorter than In-gong. She looked up at him with red and blue eyes, as In-gong had unknowingly arrived right in front of her.

"It is continuing. He is coming."

There was fear in the white woman's voice, and her shoulders trembled with anxiety. The white woman took one step toward In-gong, reaching out and touching his chest.

The forces of Conquest were communicated through the palm of her hand. In-gong's and the white woman's consciousness became connected.

In-gong closed his eyes reflexively, and he saw the Demon King's Palace burning in the darkness.

The demon king wielded his sword. The heavens seemed to shake every time he moved.

The apostles of Death couldn't receive the demon king's sword. Only the Death Knight was barely able to meet it.

The demon king's strength was absolute; his aura and magic power were beyond imagination. It was impossible for the apostles of Death to approach the battlefield itself.

The Death Knight felt both astonishment and wonder. The power of the demon king, Mitra, was the strongest among the previous guardians of the Sanctuary. He had expected the demon king to be strong, but he never imagined things to be like this.

The demon king's overwhelming magic power dominated the whole space. The flow of the magic power sealed off all use of magic in the area. The demon king couldn't use magic either, but it didn't matter to him. His sword and aura exceeded his magic.

In-gong was watching the demon king's fight, and naturally, he understood why he was seeing it. The powers of the Four Riders of the Apocalypse were getting stronger. This was one of Conquest's lost powers, as she had originally been in charge of leading the four riders.

It was a situation where the demon king was superior to everyone else. However, In-gong gritted his teeth with nervousness. The demon king was rushing. He was suffering from a deep illness and couldn't exert such power forever.

"He... is coming."

The white woman said in a trembling voice. As the Conquest Knight, In-gong could feel it as well. The sky was beginning to turn red.

Recorder Torres had thought the red dragon had already vanished. He hadn't been able to imagine that a soul without a body could endure outside the world for such a long time.

However, Torres' prediction had been misguided.

3rd Queen Sylvia gasped for breath. After exiting the transportation formation with her troops, she looked in the direction of the Demon King's Palace.

The sky was red, and an unbearably ominous feeling filled her entire body.

She had picked the closest transportation formation, but she was still a considerable distance away from the Demon King's Palace. This was a distance which couldn't be narrowed instantly with magic power.

"Please, please."

Sylvia begged while shaking her head to stop her tears from escaping. She had pretended not to know, but she had already guessed about the demon king's illness. The magic power in Sylvia's body sprang up energetically.

The dying War Knight killed Reinhardt. Her right arm was cut off, and her abdomen and shoulders were severely injured. Additionally, the armour wrapped around her body was almost completely broken.

She had fought hastily against Reinhardt, but War still smiled brightly despite knowing the War Knight was dying. After filling the broken body with the energy of war, the War Knight ran to where the Death Knight and the demon king was fighting.

The power of the demon king was enormous enough to be felt from a huge distance, but over time, the strength of the Sanctuary became weaker.

War shouted loudly towards the sky. Over the years, the War Knight had set magic spells all over the Demon World, and the result of this was the strongest light shining out from the Death Knight's throne beyond the Northern Limit Line. The power of numerous sacrifices had been gathered in one place for many years.

The power called out angrily. This was a cry which could reach them. As a result of the Sanctuary's barrier distorting, a crack started to appear in the red-tinged sky.

War was delighted, and the War Knight moved quickly.

The white woman cried out. He was coming. The red dragon was approaching outside the world, but he still couldn't reach. The Sanctuary's barrier was blocking him. However, it was only a matter of time.

Conquest didn't want to perish. She didn't want so many lives to burn again.

The white woman begged and cried. However, regardless of her will, the power of Conquest rose.

In-gong looked at the sky above the Demon King's Palace. The crack was growing.

It was lucky. The Death Knight truly thought so.

Originally, he had thought that killing the demon king would cause a crack. However, the Death Knight's calculations were wrong. Everything was different from what he had expected. The demon king's illness was deeper than he'd thought. Over the last 10,000 years, the power of the Sanctuary had weakened, while the red dragon's power was preserved beyond imagination.

The demon king also noticed the extraordinary event in the sky. Whether he knew about the existence of the red dragon or not didn't matter. He just had to keep his promise.

The crack grew bigger, and the aura rising from the body of the demon king became stronger. Now, the Death Knight couldn't take the demon king's sword anymore. The apostles of death were already virtually wiped out, and the disturbances happening in various parts of the Demon World subsided. However, this wasn't a good thing.

War burst out laughing. Then the War Knight ran between the Death Knight and the demon king. There was a dazzling aura around her, like she was burning her last flame.

Her movements were faster than the eyes could see. When it came to just swordsmanship, the War Knight was probably the best. However, the demon king wasn't confused by her dazzling movements, and his sword broke down her sword dance.

The War Knight stumbled backwards from the impact. The Death Knight quickly tried to protect the War Knight, but the demon king was faster.

The second attack of the demon king stabbed the War Knight in the chest. The War Knight, who was already dying after the battle with Reinhardt, could no longer endure her injuries. The upper half of the War Knight exploded. Her body burst, and the red energy of War was released. It was something that War had prepared after giving up on the War Knight.

As the demon king confronted the aura of War, he pulled out the sword from the War Knight's chest and released his aura. The white aura pushed away War's aura, and he swung his sword again.

The aura of War was split apart. However, the demon king didn't stop there and cut deeper. For the first time since she had appeared on the battlefield, War screamed in pain. She tried to block, but the demon king's sword was faster.

War didn't scream again. The brutal blow broke the aura of War itself. War had lost her mediator, the War Knight, and could no longer intervene, just like Famine. She just felt terrible pain.

At that moment, the sword of the Death Knight stabbed the demon king. There was a sharp sensation at the tip of the sword. A huge wall of magic power pushed roughly at the Death Knight.

The Death Knight accepted it without any resistance. After being pushed aside, he stared at the demon king.

The demon king was breathing roughly. Blood could be seen between his lips, but his sword didn't shake. Despite the fact that his life force had already weakened, the aura surrounding his body was still a blazing light.

The Death Knight declared,

“It is too late. You can’t stop us now. He will be back.”

The ceremony was already underway. The crack in the sky grew bigger, and the demon king didn’t have much aura and magic power left. Eventually, the illness would take his spirit.

The demon king looked up at the sky. He was able to see the flow of destiny, and it was just as the Death Knight said.

Beyond the crack, a presence was looking this way. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that the presence was the end of everything. However...

The demon king closed his eyes. Instead of letting go, he calmed his breathing and whispered using magic power.

Sylvia then heard the demon king’s voice. She cried and tried to refuse his words.

Elaine, who was running towards the Demon King’s Palace, froze in place. She saw the red-tinged sky and the big crack, and understood the demon king’s words. Thus, she shed tears for the demon king.

2nd Queen Titania couldn’t believe his words. The demon king was an absolute existence for her. Meanwhile, 1st Queen Aishar bit her lip and stopped herself from crying.

All the survivors running away from the Demon King’s Palace spoke the name of the demon king, and he issued his last command.

In-gong saw all of this as the white woman cried sadly. The crack became bigger, and the outline of the red dragon started to appear.

The demon king didn’t run away. He knew that if that crack was left alone, the formidable presence would descend to the ground without any interruptions. He had to stop it. At the very least, he needed to buy some time for everyone in the Demon King’s Palace to run away.

“Shutra, Semita’s and my child.”

The demon king said. In-gong was confused but quickly understood. The demon king could feel In-gong watching through Conquest.

The demon king didn't talk for long. Now wasn't the time to share questions and answers. This was the last message. So, the demon king had to show him. The thing he was planning to do now... he could only show it once.

The demon king held out his sword, and his gaze turned to the crack in the sky. In-gong realized it now. He understood what the demon king was going to tell him.

The Death Knight's eyes widened. He raised the aura of Death desperately, but it was useless. This space was already under the demon king's control. His aura and magic power were flooding the world.

How far would it go?

The demon king didn't feel any doubts, nor had he been deceived. A faint smile appeared on the demon king's face. The demon king's sword turned towards the sky. The Death Knight screamed, and the red dragon roared from behind the shattered crack.

"Watch carefully. This is extreme nothingness."

Those were the demon king's last words.

Then a pure white light split the sky.

Chapter 220

Warrior God

The last thing In-gong saw was the demon king's back. White light covered his field of view and nothing more could be seen.

His eyesight was blurry, so In-gong closed his eyes reflexively. When he opened them again, he saw the white woman instead of the Demon King's Palace.

The connection was closed. It was the power of Conquest which had allowed him to see the Demon King's Palace in the first place. However, the disconnection wasn't due to the white woman. The problem was clearly with the Death Knight and Death at the Demon King's Palace.

In-gong felt lightheaded. The white woman also had a pained look on her face.

"In-gong, be my master."

The white woman called out in a small voice. It had been a long time since he had been called In-gong instead of Shutra, so In-gong felt a slight discomfort.

The white woman's hand was still on In-gong's chest. Although the link was now thinner than at the beginning, their minds were still connected. Several images entered his head. The white woman bit her lip before speaking again.

"The demon king... he created time."

The white woman couldn't tell what exactly had happened, but the growing power of Conquest had subsided. The connection with the red dragon was also unstable. The demon king had used a move which contained extreme nothingness.

It overturned the entire situation. The advent of the red dragon, which had been planned by the Death Knight, became a mess. The will of the red dragon had been about to devour the will of the white woman, but it couldn't reach her anymore.

The demon king had created time. He had made some time for them.

In-gong understood. He remembered the extreme nothingness he'd seen.

The white woman's hand touched In-gong's cheeks and wiped the tears which had started to flow down. It was Shutra's tears which hadn't been able to be expressed until now.

The demon king, Mitra had been the strongest person in the Demon World... the protector of the Demon World.

In-gong closed his eyes. This time, the white woman embraced In-gong. As their minds were still connected, he was able to realize something. The white woman was afraid. She truly didn't want the burning of the world to be repeated. However, the white woman didn't express it. She hid her fear and showed a kind smile to In-gong.

In-gong once again felt lightheaded, and a sharp feeling passed through his head. It was hard to maintain consciousness.

"In-gong, you should sleep a little longer."

He had only woken up because it was an urgent situation. In-gong's spirit was still a mess due to the black sun Arch Lich Shutenberg had created. In-gong needed time to recover.

"You aren't alone. Those outside are trying to save you."

Many faces appeared in his fuzzy mind. Maybe he was seeing the scene outside for a moment. Caitlin was crying with a messy expression, while Felicia was yelling for help. He also saw Carack and Nayatra, as well as the faces of Locke and Zephyr.

In-gong fell deeper into his consciousness. At that moment, another voice aside from the white woman's was heard.

"Master!"

It was Green Wind. She appeared unexpectedly before In-gong and embraced him as usual. The white woman's eyes widened with surprise. Her surprise was passed onto In-gong through their connection.

This was Conquest's space which was located at the deepest part of In-gong's soul. So, Conquest was surprised that Green Wind had appeared here.

"Master is my master. He isn't your master. He's my master."

Green Wind said suddenly in a young voice.

The white woman blinked before regaining her composure. She felt a little uncomfortable due to Green Wind's eyes, but she accepted it. Conquest knew that Green Wind's reaction was derived from a deep affection for In-gong.

As the white woman stared at her freely, Green Wind's determination weakened. However, her two arms didn't let go as she held In-gong tightly. The white woman gave a small laugh and suppressed her fears firmly. Then her gaze turned back to In-gong.

"In-gong, go to sleep now. I will see you soon."

The white woman touched In-gong's cheek. It was a soft and warm touch.

In-gong closed his eyes, and he once again recalled the demon king's back. Then he fell into a deep sleep.

Quanta flew in the sky above the limit line at a really terrifying speed. There were approximately a dozen people on Quanta's back and every one of them was unusual.

Felicia and Anastasia were sitting side-by-side at the front and using magic. Anastasia reduced the air resistance with her magic power, while Felicia restored her strength. Both of them were using magic which improved the efficiency of 'faster than the wind'.

Thanks to this, Quanta had been flying at full speed for several hours.

Two women were sweating while laying next to each other. They were the saintesses of the Human World and the Demon World, Beatrice and Altesia. Due to an excessive abuse of their divine power, the two people were exhausted. However, everybody wasn't that worried as they were accustomed to the princesses being exhausted.

Baikal spread out magic barriers to protect everyone on Quanta's back. It wasn't the first time he'd had to maintain magic for hours, so his complexion wasn't good, but he didn't feel like it was unreasonable. After all, he was the oldest among the children of the demon king. So, both his aura and magic power were powerful.

In-gong and the sword duke were lying next to each other in the middle. Unlike the two saintesses, the gazes watching them weren't that unconcerned.

Caitlin held In-gong's hand and seemed like she would cry at any moment. She wanted to help In-gong recover using the power of the Starlight Core, but the situation was different this time. It was possible that Caitlin's own flesh would be destroyed as well as In-gong if she intervened.

She eventually cried again while worrying if the gandharva could really restore In-gong. In-gong's condition was serious. She sensed it because of the connection between the Starlight Core and Moonlight Core. It wasn't possible for him to recover using ordinary means.

Chris patted Caitlin and comforted her, while Silvan looked between the sword duke and Felicia with anxious eyes. Felicia looked smaller and thinner today.

Carack was silent and didn't say anything. Daphne was on standby, ready to take Felicia's place at any time, and Amita pulled out a bottle of Heavenly Wine while being hugged by Daphne.

Nayatra was looking towards the east. It was the direction of the gandharva. As the sword duke said, it wasn't a place which could be accessed through ordinary means. There gandharva were in a very remote location, and a considerable distance had to be crossed using the transportation formation.

It had already been a few hours since there was any dialogue amongst the group. Locke raised his head and looked around. His gaze moved past Carlov toward Zephyr who was sitting alone.

The work over the limit line regarding Shutenberg was done, but the children of the demon king weren't moving hastily just because of In-gong and the sword duke's injuries. At first, the group had decided to head to different places. However, Zephyr suddenly got on Quanta's back and said they should all move together.

Even though Quanta was heading east, Zephyr often looked to the south towards the Demon King's Palace. Locke got up and approached Zephyr.

Zephyr was known as the strongest prince all over the Demon World. Locke got a strange feeling from Zephyr. He thought it was a fateful encounter, but it was different from when he met Beatrice or Carlov.

It felt like he was facing his fated enemy, not half of his soul. However, that didn't mean there was a strong hostility. Rather, it seemed like they could be friends.

Locke took a deep breath. He would have to become friends with Zephyr at a later date. It was more important to finish the work in front of them immediately. Unlike the others, Locke was able to somewhat guess the reason why Zephyr was in a hurry. Locke, Zephyr, and In-gong all had one thing in common.

'The equipment of an elder dragon.'

After Arch Lich Shutenberg had been defeated, the Warrior's Sword suddenly reacted violently. It seemed to be announcing danger.

The elder dragon pieces which In-gong was wearing seemed to react in a similar manner. Additionally, Cruel Talia's armour owned by Zephyr had done the same.

What was going on outside the limit line?

'The Death Knight and War Knight.'

Those two popped into his head. It was obvious that the two Knights of the Apocalypse were doing something big.

Locke remembered something from a few hours ago. Zephyr had hesitated before using the time stopping magic on In-gong.

He might've hesitated at the thought of having a powerful rival for the position of demon king. When Locke thought about it objectively, that was the most natural answer. However, Locke thought differently.

Zephyr had noticed that In-gong was the Conquest Knight. Therefore, he was worried about treating In-gong. How much did Zephyr know? Was it because he had judged

In-gong to be an ally that he finally used the magic?

Zephyr turned his attention to Locke who was approaching him, but it was only for a moment. Then he looked back towards the south.

Zephyr had no expression on his face, but he couldn't hide the worry in his eyes. He was truly concerned about the Demon World.

Instead of speaking, Locke turned towards the south. It wasn't far from the limit line.

Chapter 221

Warrior God #2

Dawn arrived after the night, but the darkness wasn't completely pushed away. Dark clouds covered the sky. An angry wind swept across like a blade, and it seemed like the atmosphere was screaming.

Under the dark sky, 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight gulped.

The Demon King's Palace had disappeared.

Literally... the Demon King's Palace had disappeared overnight. The high walls and streets where tens of thousands of people had lived were all destroyed. It was hard to find traces of anything as everything had been turned into ashes. The only thing visible was a wilderness, as if nothing had been there in the first place. It felt like a dream that the Demon King's Palace had been there until yesterday.

Elaine felt lightheaded. Her breathing became heavy just from looking at it. It wasn't just the wilderness which caught her eyes. At the center of the wilderness, perhaps the center of the Demon King's Palace...

A gigantic red vortex was swirling. It started from the ground and reached up into the sky, swallowing up the dark clouds. Lightning flashed at the edge of the vortex. Elaine didn't know what it was. She just knew that a group of invaders had attacked the Demon King's Palace last night. She didn't know who they were or what they were aiming for.

Elaine closed her eyes tightly. She tried to breathe as she recalled the demon king's voice. He had said to run away, but those hadn't been his only last words.

The demon king had been fighting an absolute existence. Instead of feeling fear or despair, he had tried to protect all of the Demon King's Palace. He had been the king of the Demon World, the Demon World's protector.

The demon king had known about Caitlin. He had noticed that she wasn't his child.

However, he had recognized her as his own child. Why? Had he simply been showing his generosity as the king? Did he feel pity towards Gallehed and Elaine who had a deep love for each other since childhood? Did he not care because it was a just a political marriage anyway? So, that was why he had turned a blind eye to their mistake?

Elaine thought despairingly. She would never know the reason now... No, she already had some idea, and it felt like her heart would be torn apart by the feelings she was suppressing. The demon king hadn't been indifferent. He had never been an indifferent person.

Elaine gasped for breath. Her breathing, which had been about to calm down, became rough again. However, it wasn't just due to the demon king. The red vortex caused Elaine to tremble with fear.

Elaine opened her eyes forcefully and saw the red vortex again. Although the vortex swirling into the sky was far away, she could feel it from where she stood. It was the end. That was the only way she could describe that power. There was something in the red vortex. It was the enemy the demon king had fought against.

She didn't know exactly what had happened last night. However, Elaine was convinced that the demon king had done something. If it hadn't been for the demon king, Elaine and all the people around the Demon King's Palace wouldn't have been saved.

However, there was no demon king now. His back could no longer be seen.

Elaine stared at the red vortex.

What would happen once it started moving? What would happen if the thing sleeping inside woke up?

"Demon king..."

Elaine gritted her teeth. She couldn't afford to feel fear like a fool. Elaine herself was a ruler. Just like the demon king, she had to protect the lycanthropes and everyone else.

She turned her back against the red vortex and hurried.

As soon as they left the limit line, Quanta headed toward the nearest transportation formation. There, the party encountered unexpected news.

The Demon King's Palace had been attacked. It had completely vanished, leaving not a single trace behind.

Felicia couldn't believe it. She blinked with a dumbfounded expression before asking suddenly,

"Abamama?"

Caitlin looked up as well. All the children of the demon king showed the same reaction.

The manager of the transportation formation could only give one answer. He didn't know; nothing was known. However, there was some circumstantial evidence. The demon king had remained alone in the palace, then the Demon King's Palace had disappeared.

Felicia collapsed to the ground. She couldn't endure it anymore and burst into tears. Caitlin wasn't much different as she cried like a child. Tears welled up in Anastasia's eyes as she staggered. Baikal helped Anastasia while restoring his breathing. He couldn't understand what was going on, so his breathing was rough.

Silvan turned around and wept, while Chris covered his face with a big hand and said not a word.

The only one who remained upright was Zephyr. He closed his eyes tightly before getting the rest of the story from the manager. It was about the current situation of the Demon King's Palace and the captains.

The captains were divided into two groups. Captains Richard and Yecaderina remained guarding the Aegis Gate, while Gallehed and Parast were on standby at a transportation formation near the Demon King's Palace. They didn't know that the winter king had fallen at the hands of the sword duke, so they couldn't leave the Aegis Gate unguarded. Leaving two of the remaining four captains behind was the right decision.

"We need to decide our destinations."

“Orabeoni?”

Anastasia, who was leaning on Baikal, was baffled, but that only lasted for a moment. She immediately understood that the children of the demon king needed to act separately. Baikal hugged Anastasia and looked at everyone.

“I will go to the Aegis Gate as planned. Maybe we will need the power of all the remaining captains... It will be better if they know the situation as soon as possible.”

He spoke in a somewhat detached voice. The anomaly of the Demon King’s Palace wasn’t over yet; this wasn’t the time to mourn. The sword duke had killed the winter king, so there was no reason for two captains to be tied up at the Aegis Gate. One or both of them could head south.

Upon hearing Baikal’s words, Zephyr let out a breath.

“I will gather Captains Gallehed and Parast in one place.”

The group which had attacked the Demon King’s Palace was likely to have been the Knights of the Apocalypse. The captains would have to gather to deal with them.

“Warrior of the Human World, what will you do?”

Zephyr asked Locke unexpectedly. Locke, who had been standing in a corner, turned around and replied in a quiet tone,

“I will follow you.”

Zephyr’s location would be at the front lines. He wanted to prevent the fight in the Demon World from spilling over to the Human World, so this was the obvious choice. As the eldest sons revealed their destinations, Chris made a heavy expression and patted Caitlin’s head.

“Caitlin, you... should take Shutra and go with Felicia noonim to the gandharva. I will join Mother and make some preparations.”

The original plan had been for Chris to go to the gandharva, but the situation had changed. Now that the demon king was gone, the role of the queens was more

important than usual. Chris needed to help Elaine.

“Yes, I will do the same. Felicia, you can leave Omamama to me.”

Silvan tried to smile brightly, and Felicia nodded while crying. The approximate destinations had been set. Baikal then finally looked at Anastasia who was in his arms.

“Anastasia, what are you going to do?”

“I will join Mother.”

2nd Queen Titania was known for her thorns, but she believed in the power of the demon king more than anyone else. She was probably the most shaken by the demon king’s disappearance. Titania was Anastasia’s mother, so Anastasia should be beside her.

Baikal nodded as though he was delighted and turned his gaze toward the last person. Carack and Nayatra would obviously go with In-gong, so it was just Indara left.

“I will go to the location of the gandharva with the sword duke. It was what the sword duke wanted before he lost consciousness.”

Quanta was restricted in the number of people she could carry, so only three suras accompanied the sword duke. Baikal nodded again. There was no reason to ask the sword duke. They could only hope that he recovered as soon as possible.

All the destinations had been set. The group had been working hard for several hours, but there was no time to rest. Right now, they had to hurry.

However, instead of going towards the transportation formation, Zephyr headed to where Carack was carrying In-gong. Locke watched with narrowed eyes, but Zephyr didn’t do anything. Felicia instinctively flinched at Zephyr’s approach, while Caitlin moved slightly to hide Carack and Felicia from Zephyr’s gaze.

Zephyr frowned slightly at the movement which seemed like a mother defending her child. He then moved a few steps away from In-gong and gazed at him.

“Please look after Shutra.”

Zephyr said before turning away. Felicia couldn't help letting out a sigh of relief, and Caitlin wasn't much different.

Now that the demon king had disappeared, who would become the next demon king?

Baikal shook his head. It was a problem, but he didn't want to think about that right now. All the children of the demon king entered the transportation formation one by one and headed to their destinations.

The place where the gandharva were confined was in a rugged canyon in the north-east of the Demon World. The canyon was a wasteland, so dry air blew continuously. It was a place with no military value like Evian.

The transportation formation allowed for instant movement, so it was still morning when they arrived at the canyon.

Carack, who was carrying In-gong on his back, turned towards the party.

The party included In-gong, the sword duke, Nayatra who was leading the way, Felicia, Caitlin, Amita, Daphne, Delia, Seira, Indara, and two other sura warriors. Along with Carack, there was a total of 13 people.

It would be more reassuring if Vandal was here, but he and Karma were leading the troops over land.

"Is it inside that canyon?"

Carack asked Nayatra. She nodded and spoke to the exhausted Felicia and Caitlin,

"There is a magic ward inside the canyon. Beyond that is where the gandharva are located."

"Will they be hostile?"

Daphne asked with an anxious face. Her reaction was natural since the gandharva had been imprisoned for over 10 years. So, it wouldn't be strange if they held a grudge against the Demon King's Palace. Moreover, she didn't even know what the gandharva

were guilty of. It might be a terrible sin.

Caitlin's expression darkened at the reasonable concern, but Nayatra just smiled and reassured everyone.

"It's going to be fine. They all think of the prince as a star of hope."

They had already heard about In-gong through Nayatra. In-gong was their hope for being freed, so they would be more eager to save him than anyone else. Felicia looked at In-gong. Thanks to Zephyr's time stopping magic, he didn't even make any small movements.

"Shutra..."

She was like the gandharva. In-gong was already Felicia's star of hope.

"Just a little bit more."

Carack smiled and encouraged her. Then the party stepped into the canyon.

Chapter 222

Warrior God #3

A sharp wind was blowing in the canyon. The cliffs were cut vertically, and the spacing was short and complex, so it was like a maze made by nature.

The sword duke knew it was difficult to approach the canyon using an ordinary method. There were a few routes to move between the cliffs.

“I really struggled when I came here the other day.”

Nayatra said from where she was leading at the front. It seemed like she wanted to tell In-gong the story of her struggle, but he was unconscious.

At the entrance of the canyon, the remaining sura, except for Indara, returned to the Sanctuary. However, there were still 11 people in the group. The canyon was a rare place for humans, so the animals gathered around them.

“There are a lot of people here, so they won’t attack. Don’t worry. We are almost there.”

Nayatra raised her hand and pointed to a cave set in a large cliff. It was the entrance to where the gandharva were imprisoned.

Felicia was confused because she couldn’t feel any magic power, but that only lasted for a second. As soon as she entered the cave, she was startled. There was a strong magic power which didn’t leak outside the cave.

10 meters inside the cave, there was a huge magic circle. Felicia moved closer and bit her lip. It was the demon king’s magic power. Clearly, the demon king had created this magic circle. Two large stone golems were standing nearby, but they didn’t interfere with the party. Perhaps they were just here to protect the magic circle, not control who entered or left.

“I was told that this is a type of transportation formation. Once we go inside, we will arrive at the gandharva’s location which is in a completely different place.”

After her explanation, Nayatra entered the magic circle. The blue surface rippled like she was entering water. As Nayatra entered, the remaining party members were forced to follow her. With the curious Caitlin at the lead, the party entered one by one. The last to enter was Felicia.

Felicia flinched as she passed through the magic field. It wasn't because she was in an open place with a sky, instead of the cave. She had used the transportation formations before and was used to these types of sudden environmental changes.

It was the smell. Felicia was surprised by the sweet scent was all over the place. Caitlin and Amita, who had entered before her, were busy sniffing. The aroma resembled In-gong.

Felicia covered her face with her fan and looked around. It looked like a peaceful, secluded countryside. There were many trees under the sky and small houses which the gandharva seemed to live in. The gandharva, who hid or lowered their stances, looked at the group with curious eyes. Most of them were young adults and children.

"Someone will come to meet us soon."

Nayatra told Felicia. She passed through the magic circle first and asked a gandharva to spread the word.

As Nayatra said, some gandharva were approaching. At first glance, they were rushing there. Whether it was due to being imprisoned or the gandharva's traditional clothing, all of them were wearing plain, solid clothing. The blonde man in black bowed first and Felicia bowed back.

"I am the 6th Princess, Felicia Doomblade."

"I am the 8th Princess, Caitlin Moonlight."

Caitlin followed Felicia's example as her gaze was drawn to the leader. The man in front of them was tall and gave off a cold impression, but he looked somewhat like In-gong.

"I am Naraka, leader of the gandharva. It is great to see Your Highnesses."

Felicia's eyes widened with surprise. The man in front of her was Naraka Ignus, the older brother of 5th Queen Semita Ignus. She was sure since she had investigated this with In-gong.

Naraka maintained a calm look at their greeting, but those behind him couldn't hide their confusion. It was natural since the princesses of the Demon King's Palace had suddenly arrived to meet them. Moreover, it wasn't just Felicia and Caitlin who were confusing them. The gandharva couldn't keep their eyes from the person on Carack's back.

"Shutra...?"

Even Naraka couldn't maintain his calm expression when he found In-gong. An expression of strong pleasure mixed with guilt appeared on his face.

Anyway, they had to sort out the situation. Felicia opened her mouth to explain when a voice was heard from behind her.

"Naraka."

Not just Naraka but everyone turned at the voice. The sword duke on Indara's back had regained consciousness.

"Sword Duke."

Naraka spoke in a confused voice. The sword duke got down from Indara's back and closed his eyes tightly. Although his complexion was still pale, he seemed to have gained some power compared to when he collapsed beyond the limit line.

The sword duke gave a short explanation,

"The prince's condition is serious. His spirit is severely twisted. Can you do what we were talking about the other day?"

Naraka's expression changed again. It seemed like he was more surprised by the sword duke's words than In-gong's appearance. He gazed at the sword duke for a moment before sighing. Then Naraka replied in a relatively calm voice like he had made a decision.

“I’ll prepare it right away. Please wait a moment.”

He turned away from Felicia and Caitlin, and left. The other gandharva followed after Naraka, leaving the party where they were.

“Sword Duke.”

Felicia called the sword duke with a question in her tone. The sword duke frowned and said,

“I’m sorry. I will explain it gradually. I’m not in a good shape right now.”

Usually Felicia would listen to the sword duke’s words, but the situation was different right now. She said in a desperate voice,

“The Demon King’s Palace is gone.”

“What did you say?”

The sword duke asked with a bemused face. Felicia tried to explain without breaking down, but it wasn’t easy. The emotions that she suppressed were rising.

“Princess, don’t overdo it. I will explain.”

Carack told the sword duke what they had heard at the transportation formation. As the sword duke was informed that the Demon King’s Palace had been destroyed overnight and the demon king’s fate was unclear, he was appalled.

“Indara, please contact the Sanctuary... No, there is no need. It has only been a day.”

The sword duke frowned as a chaotic expression appeared on his face. Amita jumped from Daphne’s arms and asked,

“Sword Duke, do you know something?”

“I can’t be sure yet. But it is clear that the War Knight and Death Knight attacked the Demon King’s Palace.”

He had no definite knowledge about the unidentified red vortex where the Demon

King's Palace used to be, so the sword duke could only guess.

The sword duke pushed down his emotions. The situation regarding the disappearance of the Demon King's Palace and the demon king was still unknown, so now wasn't the time to mourn. He also had to hurry and contact the Sanctuary.

"Sword Duke, what did you talk about the other day? Can Shutra really be saved?"

Caitlin stepped forward and asked, as if she couldn't wait any longer. They had come to this place due to the sword duke's words, but they still didn't know how to save In-gong.

"Maybe, it is possible."

The sword duke was about to explain briefly, but by then the gandharva had returned. As soon as he heard that they were ready, the sword duke stopped the explanation and urged the party,

"Let's go. We need to hurry. I will explain after we arrive."

They almost ran through the village until they reached a small temple hidden among thick trees. It was a single-storey building, but the ceiling was very high and the roof had a large window which could be opened and closed.

The sword duke motioned for Carack to lay In-gong on the altar. Four gandharvas dressed in priest robes took their places on the magic circle under the altar. The movements of the priests were strong and disciplined. Felicia, who was examining the magic circle carefully, turned and looked at the sword duke.

Then at that moment...

Naraka, dressed in a priest's black robes, entered the temple. His hand was holding a half-ball which was slightly larger than his palm. Nayatra had no idea what it was. She just knew that it was similar to the bead she had passed to In-gong.

Felicia was now convinced. Then Amita spoke in a quiet voice,

"The gandharva's divinity..."

Amita's words were true that it was the divinity of the gandharva god, Dhrtarastra. Moreover, it wasn't an ordinary object; this was the essence of a god. 15 years ago, half of the essence had been used to give birth to Shutra.

Zentra Ignus, uncle of 5th Queen Semita Ignus, had spoken to the sword duke before leaving this world. He had explained what the gandharva really wanted. If Shutra was born safely, then this would be for him.

"The completion of the gandharva god."

A soft light shone from the magic circle around the altar. Naraka approached In-gong who was lying on the altar, and he raised Dhrtarastra's essence.

Everybody was busy. Baikal had reached the Aegis Gate, while Zephyr had joined Gallehed and Parast who were near the Demon King's Palace.

Meanwhile, 1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros and the armies of the other three queens were around the red vortex. The troops throughout the Demon World were gathering.

On top of a hill, Locke faced the red vortex and thought of the red dragon. He had heard from Guardian Queian that the red dragon had been destroyed, but the reality in front of him couldn't be denied.

"Locke."

There was a call from behind Locke. As expected, Carlov and Beatrice stood there. The call was from Beatrice who was leaning against Carlov. She still needed a little more rest. Locke made a bright expression. He wanted to comfort her by pretending to be relaxed.

However, Beatrice opened her mouth first.

"Locke."

This time, it wasn't a call. It was a sign that something was wrong. Beatrice and Carlov were looking beyond Locke.

Then Locke sensed it. He turned and looked at the red vortex.

With a large thunderous sound, it began.

Chapter 223

Warrior God #4

Zephyr raised his head up. While Dark Saintess Altesia was still stunned, Zephyr stepped out of the temporary barracks and stared at the red vortex.

The others were the same. Everybody in the army stopped what they were doing and gazed at the red vortex. It was instinctual—an irresistible command.

3rd Queen Sylvia was trembling. Despite the considerable distance, her entire body shuddered from the terrible magic power. Some sat down in their place, while others cried out in fear just from looking at it.

Lightning tore through the dark clouds. There was a huge presence within the red vortex.

A huge flame... It was the soul of the red dragon who had seven heads and ten horns. The remnants of the vortex became wild winds which spread all over the place, and lightning began to pour down from the dark clouds.

Zephyr understood. It was impossible to compare the huge presence to Death or War. This was the end.

The red dragon...

The Red Serpent God...

He spread his huge red wings.

The Death Knight was inside the red dragon. In the midst of the red world, he saw the red dragon's essence.

It was a blazing flame. The body of the red dragon, who had once driven the world to

the point of destruction, had been destroyed for a long time, but his soul was still shining.

The ceremony to call down the red dragon wasn't completely successful. The original plan had been to bring the red dragon's soul to new flesh.

The first candidate was 2nd Prince Zephyr Ragnaros. The moment he had been born, all eyes in the Demon World had focused on him, and he had a body capable of enduring the red dragon's soul.

The Death Knight, who had woken up after sleeping intermittently for 1,000 years, focused on obtaining Zephyr. However, after his plan at Thunderdoom Fortress went awry, he rarely had a chance to capture Zephyr. Zephyr had clearly been on the lookout and avoided the War Knight and Death Knight, who hadn't been able to reach out to him directly until the advent of the red dragon.

War continued to desire Zephyr, but Death was different. The ceremony to call down the red dragon was a fight of time.

Death had to complete the work before the elder dragons recovered their strength after the battle 1,000 years ago.

The Death Knight had given up on Shutenberg. He had sacrificed his largest hand in order to get rid of all obstructions, including the sword duke. Rather than waiting for the demon king's illness to worsen, he had gone and attacked the Demon King's Palace.

He would kill the demon king and take his body. If that didn't work, the red dragon would be called down to the body of the Death Knight, who was the strongest warrior and magician of the indigenous species.

That had been his plan.

However, it didn't come true. The demon king, Mitra had crushed all of his plans.

The red dragon didn't get a new body of flesh. Only the soul of the red dragon returned to the world from which it had been banished 10,000 years ago. It was impossible to prepare a new body for the red dragon now. The demon king's final strike had dealt an irrevocable wound to the red dragon's soul.

The Death Knight laughed bitterly. As someone who had once been a king, he paid homage to the demon king. The demon king had been clearly heroic. It was true that he had crushed the Death Knight's plan.

However, it was still good. The plan might be broken, but it didn't matter. The red dragon had returned. Although it was just the soul, his powers accompanied it. With that strength, the red dragon would once again destroy the Demon World. This time it would truly be the end.

The Death Knight thought of the Sanctuary. Once the souls of the indigenous species were destroyed, the Demon World would return to its original form, and the prosperity of the recent years would end.

Who would stop the red dragon? Who could stop the red dragon? Who would dare oppose him?!

The elder dragons hadn't regained their strength yet, and the demon king had now disappeared.

The warrior brought up by Guardian Queian and Zephyr were obviously strong. However, even they couldn't be the red dragon's opponent. They weren't the first Drakon Kechatulla, who had defeated the red dragon.

The Death Knight shared the red dragon's gaze. He looked down at the army which had come from all over to surround the red vortex. They were merely lambs afraid of destruction.

None of them could stop the red dragon. It was doubtful if they would even fight.

The red dragon spread his wings. Seeds of destruction were sprinkled on the desolate land, and beasts of destruction sprang from the ground. The red dragon started moving as the black beasts that emerged from the ground moved ahead of him.

He moved in the direction of the Sanctuary...

The true center of the Demon World.

The Death Knight wasn't wrong.

The elder dragons thought the red dragon's soul had already vanished. Therefore, they weren't prepared for the red dragon's return. As they were only prepared to stop the Four Knights of the Apocalypse, they couldn't fight the red dragon.

There wasn't enough time for them to regain their strength. The elder dragons were severely hurt from the fight 1,000 years ago, and Cruel Talia still hadn't regained consciousness.

The Death Knight was right. No one could stop the red dragon.

Guardian Queian thought so. However, the Great Enkidu was different.

He raised his head from the lava, sensing it was finally time for him to act. His role wasn't to fight immediately. The fragmented piece of Ainkel's soul, which had stayed beside Enkidu, glittered. The Great Enkidu remembered Recorder Torres' words.

The equipment of the elder dragons... They contained the power of the elder dragons. There was one thing which he could do right now.

Enkidu remembered one person, and he sent his will to the equipment of the elder dragons.

The white woman lifted her head in the darkness. She could feel it clearly. The red dragon's spirit had woken up. He was marching through the Demon World to destroy the Sanctuary.

The ones who would stop him... The ones who joined him...

Coincidences and inevitability... The white woman felt the flow of fate. She understood why she existed in this world.

The power of Conquest was swelling up. It responded to the red dragon. Conquest didn't want to destroy civilizations and burn lives like she did in the past. The white woman didn't want it, and she knew how to escape from the influence of the red dragon.

“Wake up and become my master. Conquer me now.”

The white woman said quickly. Green Wind was startled, but she didn't care. The white woman—Conquest stretched out her hand and touched In-gong's cheek.

The sword duke accepted the demon king's death.

The years they'd spent together weren't short.

The sword duke had known the demon king since the first time Mitra picked up a sword. He was able to clearly envision the time Mitra became the demon king. The sword duke remembered laughing as the demon king picked up his first child, Baikal, in an awkward manner.

His heart felt empty. Since learning about the demon king's illness, he had been prepared to face this moment. However, no matter how prepared he was, the sword duke couldn't stop the sharp sword from slicing his heart.

The demon king and the sword duke were protectors of the Sanctuary. It was their duty to protect the Sanctuary which gave abundance to the Demon World, a land where people couldn't live.

He knew about the fight 1,000 years ago. It was a secret of the Sanctuary, so he had pretended not to know about the Four Knights of the Apocalypse to the 9th Prince. After the Sanctuary had been revealed to 9th Prince, the Four Knights of the Apocalypse had already been revealed, so there was no need to speak of it.

Despite the illness, the power of the demon king was still worth mentioning. It was hard to imagine that he would lose against the War Knight and Death Knight.

The red vortex which had been created at the place where the Demon King's Palace used to be...

The sword duke felt something ominous from it. Suppressing his feelings, he looked at what was before him.

The ceremony was in progress. The magic circle painted under the altar was glowing with a white light, and the gandharva continued to chant as Naraka pushed the Dhrtarastra Essence into In-gong's chest. The half-ball was sucked into In-gong's chest with a bright light.

Zentra Ignus had desired the completion of a god in his lifetime. It had been his desire to create an incarnation of Dhrtarastra using the essence.

In-gong's body, which accepted the essence, floated slowly into the air. The magic circle around the altar emitted a brighter light, and In-gong's body was surrounded by a fragrant wind.

In-gong's hair turned black. Then it became very long and scattered in the air.

Many of the gandharva, including Naraka who was presiding over the ceremony, were amazed, but In-gong's group was different. It was clearly a mysterious sight, but it wasn't much different from In-gong's Spiritualism state which they had seen several times.

'It is as expected.'

It was possible to maintain Spiritualism at all times—that was the effect of the ceremony which the sword duke had expected. In fact, just that was amazing. The main purpose was to restore In-gong, so he wasn't disappointed.

The sword duke calmed his mind and observed the ceremony with calm eyes.

Then at that moment...

A white light sprang from In-gong's body. Simultaneously, the equipment of the elder dragons appeared in a circle around him. White Eagle and Earth Quaker were placed on either side of In-gong. El Ragra appeared above In-gong's chest while Night Watch was below In-gong.

It didn't end there. Different powers were released from the equipment of the elder dragons, and Earth Quaker gave a low cry.

The light around In-gong's body became stronger, and the equipment of the elder dragons shone with a different light. A strong flow of power which couldn't be

compared to before swirled around In-gong.

Naraka completely panicked. The gandharva, who were injecting magic power into the circle, couldn't endure it any longer and were thrown out. Despite this, the spell didn't stop, and Earth Quaker's roar became louder.

This was an unexpected situation. Naraka thought about stopping the ceremony, but the sword duke was different. He had already witnessed a similar phenomenon in the past.

At the Thunderdoom Fortress, 9th Prince had joined two different powers together.

The sword duke understood the situation since his eyes could penetrate anything, while the King's Knights understood it through instinct. They were directly connected to In-gong, so they knew better than anyone else.

Carack laughed joyfully, while Nayatra imagined something happening, where the shield that was his position as a prince didn't matter. Caitlin smiled brightly and placed her hands on her chest, where the Starlight Core was. She could feel the power of the Moonlight Core pulse.

"Shutra."

Felicia said while smiling like a fool. She had known it and believed in him. It was natural for In-gong to do something like this. He had always been like this.

The main character accepted the different powers. The dragon heart and Moonlight Core became one with the power of the dragon nestled in his reborn body. Then the power of Conquest rose up to cover everything.

Hence, he was born...

And thus, he opened his eyes. The true Dhrtarastra...

The true Drakon Kechatulla who emanated the power of the elder dragons and could be compared to the first Drakon Kechatulla...!

In-gong had conquered the white woman. He had completely dominated the equipment of the elder dragons and accepted Great Enkidu's will. He was the

Conquest Knight...

As well as the Drakon Kechatulla.

In-gong opened his eyes. He radiated splendid divine power.

Chapter 224

Sanctuary

Strange things were happening all over the Demon World.

The War Knight had prepared magic circles in various places for the descent of the red dragon, and these magic circles shone with a red light. It was an ominous sign that disaster was approaching. This was the trumpet that signalled the beginning of the red dragon's destruction.

Beyond the limit line, those who wanted the destruction began to move. They were the foolish ones who didn't know the destruction of the red dragon wasn't just limited to the Demon World, and that the whole world would burn.

A large army of northern barbarians started their march. The supreme being known as the winter king had vanished, but there were still hundreds of thousands of troops. The monsters roared from the west. They all moved in the same direction.

Those in the east didn't stay still either. The barbarians who had lost the barbarian king realized instinctively that it was now the time to burn Evian and obtain Takar.

Baikal, who was at the Aegis Gate, received reports of all these attacks at the same time. However, he couldn't afford to send away any troops. Despite the collapse of the Demon King's Palace, the two captains couldn't leave the Aegis Gate because it was important to guard against the northern barbarians.

Then finally, something happened. Hundreds of thousands of barbarians charged towards the Aegis Gate.

Richard and Yecaderina were on the walls, and Baikal was with them.

The Aegis Gate wasn't called the absolute line of defense just because of its excellent defense. It was because this was a land which absolutely must be protected. As soon as the Aegis Gate opened, the south would be devastated by the northern barbarians.

Baikal focused aura on his eyes and looked far away. The barbarians were dark spots flocking over the white snow. Hundreds of thousands of people were moving their feet at the same time.

Baikal gulped and took a deep breath. Then he gazed to the south in the direction of the Demon King's Palace.

“Zephyr.”

Baikal couldn't help calling out the name of his younger brother. He then drew his sword and turned back around. The barbarians shouted, and the army on the wall hit the drums and blew the horns.

The north began the fight.

Lightning struck, and a vibrant red moon emerged in the dark sky.

The appearance of the red dragon was overwhelming. Just the fact that it was a dragon induced fear into everyone. Huge black beasts sprouted from the ground in front of the red dragon, and their numbers reached the hundreds.

Then the red dragon started moving. It didn't even look at the soldiers surrounding it.

3rd Queen Sylvia gathered her trembling hands together and closed her eyes tightly. She had to stop the red dragon, and it wasn't just for revenge.

An unbearably ominous feeling was strangling her neck. Sylvia didn't know about the Sanctuary, nor did she know about the magic of abundance which spread out over the Demon World. However, she could feel it instinctively.

The Demon World would be destroyed if they couldn't stop the red dragon. They had to stop that march somehow.

4th Queen Elaine felt the same. However, she couldn't move the troops. She was the queen of the lycanthropes as well as a queen of the Demon King's Palace. So, she had to keep a calm mindset. If the lycanthropes moved first, the other queens would move with her. It would be like collapsing dominoes.

Would this really be the case? Was it right to start the decisive battle here? Elaine's instincts, which were terrified of the red dragon, commanded her to shift into beast form right there. However, Elaine suppressed her transformation. Her wild senses warned against her will to fight. It wasn't the time yet. The right moment hadn't arrived.

She needed to persevere. It was easy to command a charge, but once it started, there was no reversing it.

2nd Queen Titania waited with narrowed eyes. She wasn't waiting for the decisions of 3rd Queen Sylvia and 4th Queen Elaine, but for the decision from the one closest to becoming the demon king. Unfortunately, it wasn't Anastasia. It was the prince who was called the strongest.

Zephyr closed his eyes. Gallehed and Parast, standing next to him, were ready to draw their swords at any time. Quanta growled as she stared at the red dragon. The dragons could be called the children of the elder dragons, so they were all hostile toward the red dragon.

The rest of Zephyr's troops, including Sektum, were currently beyond the Northern Limit Line. Zephyr was sorry for their absence, but he didn't obsess over it. The red dragon moved forward, and the black beasts began running.

There was no time. He had to make a decision.

"Don't fight," Zephyr said.

He ignored the confused eyes and looked somewhere else. It was toward Warrior Locke, who was holding his sword and watching the red dragon. As Zephyr knew about the Sanctuary, he could see that the red dragon was moving towards it.

Zephyr then took a step back. The important thing was to protect the Sanctuary from the red dragon. It didn't matter where they stopped him. They wouldn't fight here; they couldn't beat the red dragon.

More power was needed. One more person was needed. He wasn't talking about the sword duke. His strength certainly outweighed the captains, but he wasn't who Zephyr was thinking about. Their meeting had been short, and the time in which they fought

together hadn't been long. However, Zephyr was convinced.

"Send the coordinates to each army. We will use the transportation formation to get there ahead of the red dragon."

They would camp in front of the Sanctuary as it would take some time for the red dragon to reach there. Zephyr didn't know if that person would make it on time. If he didn't arrive by the time the red dragon reached the Sanctuary, then it couldn't be helped.

Locke gazed at Zephyr, and Zephyr looked back before turning to the right. The demon king's army started their march. Every direction was different, but the destination was the same:

The Sanctuary. It was the land which would determine the destiny of the world and the war which had started 10,000 years ago.

"Shutra."

Zephyr called out briefly as he remembered In-gong's face.

A divine scent filled the inside of the temple, and the brilliant divine light seemed to bless everyone.

In-gong opened his eyes. His long black hair was blown by a wind that seemed to come out of nowhere. Then the incarnation of Dhrtarastra took his first breath.

Naraka and the other gandharva gulped. They were so excited that they couldn't speak. Even Nakara, who condemned his uncle for his reckless conduct, had no choice but to cry as the gandharva god appeared before him.

In-gong exhaled. He cleared his throat and stood up slowly. His body was light, like he had been born again. It was similar to the metamorphosis when he got the dragon heart.

In-gong waved his hands around slightly. Then the equipment of the elder dragons around In-gong started to move. El Ragra was the first to take its place on In-gong's

finger of his right hand. Then Earth Quaker settled on his right arm, while White Eagle was on his left arm. Lastly, Night Watch wrapped gently around In-gong's neck.

Instantly, In-gong was armed, and he stepped down from the altar. He looked around at everyone gathered before the altar.

"Shutra!"

The first one to scream was Felicia. She shouted loudly and ran toward In-gong with tears of joy flowing down her cheeks. Despite her smiling expression, he could tell how anxious she had been.

In-gong opened his arms. Felicia didn't stop and threw herself into In-gong's arms. She wrapped her arms around his neck and burst into tears again.

He was alive. In-gong had returned alive. Her heart was already pained due to the absence of the demon king. So, when her emotions rose, she couldn't suppress it anymore. Felicia placed her lips against In-gong's.

In-gong responded to Felicia's action, hugging her slender body and pulling her closer.

Caitlin's eyes widened with shock from where she had been running beside Felicia. Delia also covered her mouth to conceal her surprise, while Nayatra stomped her feet with frustration.

When the short and intense kiss finished, Felicia stepped back with a surprised expression. However, she was still being held in In-gong's arms, so she couldn't really step away from him.

"What is it?"

In-gong blurted out. Was it amazement that she had kissed him? That wasn't it. Felicia spoke with an expression that contained a mixture of embarrassment and confusion.

"Y-You are so delicious."

In-gong was shocked for a moment, then he laughed out loud. This time, In-gong was the one who kissed Felicia first. It was a longer and more intense kiss. Amita responded to the word 'delicious' as they gazed between In-gong and Felicia.

Then Felicia withdrew and sighed again. In-gong looked at Caitlin who was approaching him. Her eyes were wide and her face was red. She looked so cute that In-gong kissed Caitlin on the forehead. Caitlin flinched. She made a dissatisfied expression, but it couldn't be helped.

"This isn't the time to play around."

Carack said in a scolding tone, but he was also smiling.

In-gong nodded, agreeing easily. Like always, Carack was right. The situation wasn't good enough to waste time on the joy of his recovery. In-gong's resurrection ceremony hadn't been short. It had been a few hours since it began, and in the meantime, news had been transmitted through Indara. In-gong hadn't received Indara's report, but he knew about the situation through Conquest. The red dragon was advancing towards the Sanctuary.

"Sword Duke, do you want to join?"

In-gong looked at the sword duke. In-gong had the eyes of Dhrtarastra, so he could see the flow of aura throughout the sword duke's body. It wasn't normal, but it wasn't significant enough that the sword duke couldn't move. He had hurried his recovery while In-gong's ceremony had been in progress.

"Don't worry. I still have the strength for one more fight."

Dark emotions were hidden behind the sword duke's smile. It was because he saw the appearance of the demon king in In-gong's long black hair. In-gong nodded slowly, then he greeted Naraka and activated the power of Conquest. An illusion of the white woman with the golden crown appeared behind In-gong.

"Go, my master. Everyone is waiting for you."

Conquest had been conquered by the Conquest Knight. She was truly his and was now able to escape from the fate of destruction. Felicia, Caitlin, and Carack belonged to the King's Knights, so they intuitively understood that the white woman was Conquest. The power of Conquest wound around them.

However, there was one person alone who expressed dissatisfaction.

“This thieving cat! Master is my master! He isn’t your master!”

Green Wind cried out as she appeared beside the white woman, but the white woman just laughed. Green Wind quickly looked at In-gong for help. In-gong laughed awkwardly, but he didn’t take sides. Right now, it was imperative that he reach the Sanctuary.

“Shall we go? Faster than the wind?”

Carack asked with a laugh. In-gong pulled out the flag of light and replied,

“Yes, faster than the wind.”

As the leader, Carack received the flag of light. The power of Conquest and the blessing of the wind stretched out like they were competing with each other.

Their goal was the Sanctuary. Then the sprint which was faster than the wind began.

Chapter 225

Sanctuary #2

The fight in the north wasn't easy.

The northern barbarians didn't fear death. They didn't think about what would happen to the body when they died. So, the barbarians just charged over the corpses.

There were too many of them, and they weren't focused on just one point. Thanks to the absolute power of the captains, it was easy to protect the gates, but that was it. The barbarians weren't obsessed with the gate. It seemed as though they wanted to knock down the walls of Aegis Gate itself.

However, it was inefficient. Even if they won, there would be huge sacrifices. Indeed, many barbarians lost their lives before they could even fight properly. Yet, they didn't stop. Baikal, who guarded the gates, realized that the northern barbarians weren't afraid of death. They had forgotten death itself. War's madness dominated them all.

Baikal, who had been using his magic without rest, looked up at the sky. He saw the red moon made of magic power. Down below, the barbarians were moving forward endlessly. It was just like the fight against Arch Lich Shutenberg beyond the limit line. The barbarians before him were no different from Shutenberg's undead.

The tsunami pushed against the wall. The two captains acted as a breakwater, but that wasn't enough. The tsunami was still healthy even if the waves were breaking.

However, Baikal couldn't allow them to be swallowed up. It was then that he used a large attack spell. The weapons installed on the wall spewed out flames, while Captain Richard swept along the wall with an aura blade dozens of meters long. Additionally, Captain Yecaderina's magic invigorated their allies.

Amidst screams and cries, some parts of the walls were finally destroyed. The dam which stopped the flood was starting to crack. The crack would soon widen, and once the water started to leak, it couldn't be stopped.

How long would they be able to endure? What would be faster? The deaths of the northern barbarians or the collapse of the Aegis Gate? Baikal couldn't think about it anymore. Part of the eastern wall had collapsed with a big bang.

The new chief of the Paran clan, Belovaki, was used to fighting against the monsters from beyond the Western Limit Line. However, this was the first time he had seen so many monsters. The monsters, which were huge even when compared to the Paran clan, threw their heavy bodies against the walls. The giants felt a big shock as the walls of the fortress crumbled.

The members of the Paran clan weren't the only ones in this position. There were tens of thousands of lizardmen, the Gullam tribe, and Victor.

When Belovaki had first seen them, he had thought of victory. He thought they would be able to defeat any enemies. However, he was wrong.

Belovaki swung his axe and struck the neck of the nearest monster. The moment the neck was struck, the massive monster's tail flew up and struck Belovaki's back. As Belovaki fell to his knees in pain, Galang, the Gullam clan's best hunter, rushed to save him, but there wasn't enough time. Galang's two legs couldn't move fast enough.

With a roar, Galang threw the spear he was holding. It was just as a monster aimed its mouth for Belovaki's neck.

Belovaki thanked Galang, but simultaneously, he was sure that this was his last moment.

The monster's teeth were a little faster than Galang's spear.

Evian was burning while the eastern barbarians marched quickly. It was a land they had already stepped on, so there was no delay.

Since the chances of an invasion were low, there weren't many soldiers guarding the limit line. Diotima, the new defense captain of the bases, started cursing.

Reports flew from all over the area. The barbarians were burning every soldier of the demon king's army they encountered. The meaning of the barbarians burning the soldiers alive was clear. It was time to fight again. In order to create that time, they needed people to stand up and fight.

Diotima cursed once again and prepared to fight. Not far from here, the cries of the eastern barbarians could be heard.

The demon king's army was running. They greatly reduced the distance they had to travel by using the transportation formations, but the speed of the red dragon and his beasts was too fast. There was no time.

The boys and girls guarding the transportation formation watched the army with wide eyes. The demon king's army gathered from various places and spread all over the grassland.

They had barely made it in time. It wasn't easy to move tens of thousands of soldiers in hours, no matter how much they used the transportation formations. Moreover, there was no transportation formation at the Sanctuary which could transfer large-scale troops. They had to run from the nearest transportation formation to the Sanctuary, so the physical strength of the troops was quite exhausted.

Flying up above them on Quanta, Zephyr moved his gaze far away. The red dragon and black beasts were heading straight towards the Sanctuary.

Zephyr knew about the existence of the Sanctuary. The Sanctuary was the center of an enormous magic which sustained the abundance of the entire Demon World. Without the Sanctuary, the magic of abundance couldn't exist, and that magic was the lifeline of the Demon World.

So, he had to stop them here. He couldn't allow for the destruction of the Sanctuary. Zephyr explained the secret of the Sanctuary to the queens, children of the demon king and the captains.

The reason why the guardians had hidden the role of the Sanctuary was simple. The secrecy was a shield to protect the Sanctuary. It wouldn't be good if the existence of something which could destroy the Demon World was known. Making sure that no

one knew about it was the best barrier as it eliminated people attacking it.

However, the circumstances were different this time. At the very least, the ones leading the army needed to know the importance of this land.

Zephyr closed his eyes. Fortunately, none of the queens wanted to give up. They were the leaders of each species and knew it would be meaningless to escape from this land. If the lands became devastated, then neither the lycanthropes, the succubi, nor the dark elves could maintain their current prosperity.

That wasn't all. The queens all wanted to get revenge for the demon king. 3rd Queen Sylvia was famous for her deep love for the demon king, while 2nd Queen Titania and 4th Queen Elaine had the same thoughts.

He heard the cry of the black beasts from afar. There was no more time. Soon, the trumpets would blow to signal the start of the battle.

Zephyr opened his eyes. He naturally looked over at Locke, who was also looking at Zephyr.

This was a strange coincidence. It had only been one day since they met, but it felt like they had known each other for a long time.

Locke smiled at Zephyr and grasped the Warrior's Sword. Zephyr didn't smile, but he responded by tapping Cruel Talia's armour. The two of them could feel it through the equipment of the elder dragons. In-gong was coming. They didn't know the exact timing, but it was clear he was coming.

Zephyr closed his eyes again. He erased all thoughts in his head. The temptation of War which he sometimes heard couldn't be heard anymore. It was really time to fight now. All of the captains nearby stared at Zephyr. The queens were also waiting for Zephyr's command.

"It's okay! Even if we don't win, aren't we just going to Erebos' side?"

Dark Saintess Altesia suddenly said in a youthful tone. Her words were so absurd that Zephyr couldn't help smiling. Altesia just grinned and shrugged, while Zephyr responded with a nod. Then he looked up at the red dragon.

This wasn't an ordinary fight. It was meaningless to surround the enemy. They had to break in and shatter the enemy.

Zephyr raised his sword and gave a command.

“Charge! Charge!”

The army led by Captain Gallehed began to charge. In conjunction with pre-defined roles, the armies of the queens started to move as well. Finally, the fight had begun. The thousands of black beasts and soldiers clashed.

Captain Gallehed swung his sword. As one of the five captains, his actions were truly great. It was like the how sword duke had smashed against the tsunami of the undead.

However, Zephyr couldn't smile at these actions. He was concentrating power into the hand holding the Dragon Slayer while keeping his gaze far away.

The sky was black. The red moon made of magic power was shining brightly. Under it, the red dragon spread his wings wider.

The red dragon was truly huge with a body length of hundreds of meters long. His seven heads with ten horns watched the battle between the beasts and the army. An enormous magic power emerged from the red dragon.

It was difficult to call it magic. This was closer to a god's miracle. A meteor shower poured down from the sky. There was an earthquake big enough to break the ground, and a gigantic vortex of flames swept through the middle of the battlefield.

It didn't distinguish between the black beasts and the soldiers, and death swept through the entire battlefield.

The queens did their best to prevent any damage. Sylvia's and Titania's magic defended the soldiers, while Elaine commanded the troops desperately. The captains broke the disaster with their mighty magic power.

Altesia and Beatrice began to pray, while Locke and Zephyr both rushed toward the red dragon. Someone had to draw the red dragon's attention.

The red dragon felt the two of them approaching. The Death Knight also knew it, but

he just laughed at them. He remembered the battlefield 10,000 years ago. It was all useless. This was the red dragon. The end was here... The red dragon was a real monster!

All seven heads of the red dragon looked at the same place, and it wasn't at Zephyr and Locke. All 14 eyes looked at the Sanctuary. He was focused on the shield which was wrapped around it.

Zephyr knew what the red dragon was going to do. Quanta gathered her magic power urgently, but it was too late. Even if she could cast it in time, it was impossible to prevent this.

The seven heads all used a breath attack, and seven pillars of light rushed toward the shield.

The beasts and soldiers raised their heads simultaneously as the power of destruction rushed above them. It was such a huge force that they forgot to fight.

The breaths hit the Sanctuary's shield, and the whole area shook from the shock. The breath attacks which hit the shield broke into fragments and became disasters which hit the demon king's army.

Elaine barely managed to swallow back her scream as she gazed at the Sanctuary. Fortunately, the shield was still standing. However, she wondered how long it could endure.

"Ludwig."

Elaine said curtly. Then she transformed angrily into a wolf with blue fur. In addition to Ludwig, the strongest lycanthrope warrior, Bruce, moved with her as well. It was foolish for a queen to go to the front lines. However, this time, she had to imitate the demon king. She had to stop the red dragon somehow.

Elaine rushed toward the red dragon. The captains also moved through the black beasts toward the red dragon. Quanta unleashed a breath attack, while Zephyr and Locke both moved.

A ray of light poured down from the red moon, and disasters once again struck the ground. It was impossible to fight properly. Despite the disasters, the major powers of

the army started aiming at the red dragon. The red dragon roared and all the magic attacks disappeared.

This was just the beginning. For the first time, Zephyr felt a sense of helplessness. Locke also felt fear toward an enemy for the first time in his life. The red dragon spread his wings, and the seven heads once again started to collect magic power.

It was at this moment that...

The shield around the Sanctuary disappeared. The silver barrier fell like a lie. Had the aftermath of the first attack just appeared? Could it no longer hold out? The shield protecting the Sanctuary was gone, and the light column in the center was revealed.

That was the true Sanctuary. It was the mighty power of life created 10,000 years ago by the indigenous species, at the cost of all their lives.

A scream rang out, and Zephyr shook off his helplessness. If he let the red dragon attack right now, then everything was over. He couldn't think about why the shield of the Sanctuary had fallen.

Zephyr just had to stop it. He had to do something, anything—buy time! It was at this moment that...

Locke looked at the Warrior's Sword. He could hear the voice of Guardian Queian, who showed Locke one fact.

Amidst the screams, a horn blasted out. As a Drakon Kechatulla, Locke was able to know that the sound of this horn, which transcended space and resonated through the world, was from a Drakon Kechatulla.

The lizardmen fighting in the west heard the horn, while the giants, who were fighting in various places, recognized the Giant King's Sword which gave them strength.

Baikal, who was rushing through the collapsed wall, looked up at the sky again. There was a white crack on the red moon. Galang's spear pierced the head of a monster. Then instead of Belovaki dying, Belovaki's weapon pierced the monster. There was a new vitality pulsing through his body. Diotima looked up at the sky with a stupid expression. She was reminded of the back of one person—the one who had recaptured the 5th base.

The horn blew again. There was a white shape running toward them from far away. It was then that Zephyr understood. He finally realized it. The Sanctuary's shield hadn't been destroyed. The sanctuary itself had turned off the shield.

It was in order to greet someone. To greet him... and to convey the power of the Sanctuary!

A flag of light shone brightly. The growing power of Conquest pushed away the fear caused by the red dragon.

The Warrior's Sword which Locke was holding flew into the air. Simultaneously, Cruel Talia's armour removed itself from Zephyr and headed towards the place where the light was. Finally, the person they'd been waiting for had arrived.

He stood in front of the Sanctuary and naturally accepted the Warrior's Sword and Cruel Talia's armour. It was the true Drakon Kechatulla...

The only opponent for the red dragon.

In-gong glared at the red dragon, and the power of Conquest was revealed.

Chapter 226

Myth

There were some things In-gong knew because he had conquered the white woman.

The Four Riders of the Apocalypse were truly godlike beings.

However, they were different from Erebos or Mother Earth. Erebos and Mother Earth were just beings who kept the balance of the world. They didn't have clear personalities. Although it was possible to interact with them, it was impossible to establish a dialogue or emotional exchange with them.

Therefore, they didn't intervene despite the imminent destruction of the Demon World. They only gave strength to those who longed for power and desire.

The elder dragons resembled the Four Riders of the Apocalypse. Like them, the elder dragons were gods with personality and flesh.

1,000 years ago, all Four Riders of the Apocalypse had lost their bodies. So, they couldn't influence the world except through their knights.

The elder dragons' situation wasn't much better. No, it was worse. Half of the elder dragons had lost their flesh and the remaining three couldn't function properly. Cruel Talia still hadn't woken up from her healing sleep, while Enkidu and Queian had regained consciousness but not their strength.

In-gong understood Conquest, and the white woman shared her feelings with him. She had her own unique personality and feelings. Conquest refused the fate of destruction. Despite being born as one of the Four Riders of the Apocalypse, she longed for the world to be protected.

Her wish was small and trivial, a flower which bloomed in the ruins of her mind. It was small and beautiful, slender and pathetic. However, despite the harsh winds, it didn't give up on living. The fluctuation was small, but her mind shook surely. Every time she took one step toward the end of the world, the shaking got bigger.

The other riders also had feelings. Due to that, they still felt affection towards Conquest who had betrayed them. They both loved and hated her, and those sentiments were confusing.

The elder dragons were similar. Recorder Torres gave his heart for Conquest. Watcher Ainkel sympathized with Conquest, and Guardian Queian didn't believe Conquest. There was doubt and hate.

If so, what about the red dragon? Did he have a personality or was he just a monster? Despite being banished from the world, he had maintained his existence for thousands of years. That tenacity was indeed amazing. His will to destroy the world was very solid.

However, In-gong had made up his mind. He just didn't think about it.

'I don't care.'

So what if he had personalities and feelings? The red dragon wanted to destroy the world, and the riders were just helping him. If so, In-gong would stop it. It was the same as what the sword duke always said. He had to protect his precious things and smash the incoming enemies!

The will of Enkidu, passed on through Earth Quaker, laughed. Feelings of embarrassment were passed on from Guardian Queian through the Warrior's Sword.

'My master.'

Conquest whispered. Green Wind whined, but it was only briefly.

In-gong looked away. The red dragon stopped, and they stared at each other.

The red dragon gave off a strong presence. In-gong was reborn as the true incarnation of Dhrtarastra, but he still couldn't reach that strength. The power of a god alone wasn't enough.

He had dominated Conquest and become the true Conquest Knight, but it was still insufficient. The power of one who desired the end of the world wouldn't bring down the monster.

The equipment of the elder dragons had unified. Although their bodies had been lost, their souls were passed on through the equipment. Ainkel's dragon heart had become one with the Moonlight Core, and he was now the true Drakon Kechatulla.

However, it was still lacking. Despite all of this, In-gong couldn't narrow the small distance between him and the red dragon.

The red dragon stared at In-gong. Thousands of black beasts and soldiers were fighting in combat, but at this moment, there seemed to only be the red dragon and In-gong.

'Master.'

At this moment, Green Wind spoke in a voice like she wanted to help him. In-gong gave a small laugh. He was able to see it now. In-gong understood what the white woman and Green Wind were saying. So, he accepted it without any resistance.

The light column of the Sanctuary started to emit a stronger light, and the red dragon widened his wings and roared like Earth Quaker.

The last piece...

It was being transmitted from the Sanctuary. This was something that only he could inherit from the Sanctuary.

The demon king didn't simply refer to the king of the Demon World. The demon king was the protector of the Sanctuary. Just like Erebos and Mother Earth, it was the person who maintained the strength of the Sanctuary itself.

The Sanctuary, which had lost Mitra, wanted a new demon king. They had opened the shield in order to accept In-gong.

The red dragon unleashed his magic power. Once again, disaster struck the battlefield. However, it was too late. The succession had already begun.

Time seemed to slow down, like it had frozen over. In-gong was reminded of the past.

At first, he had just wanted to live. He'd just thought about not wanting to be killed by

Zephyr. Then his thoughts changed. He wanted to protect Felicia and Caitlin, and prevent that disastrous future.

In-gong continued to meet more people, then he wanted to protect Chris and Silvan as well. It was the same with Anastasia. He wished to protect all the children of the demon king.

Then In-gong remembered Green Wind begging him to pat her head... Amita smiling happily with a big belly and Elaine's mischievous grin. There was also the sword duke's greetings with Felicia and Anastasia and Sylvia's gentle hug... Vandal chuckling next to the blushing Nayatra. Delia, Seira, Karma, and Daphne were also essential.

"I'm sorry, are you leaving me out?"

Carack laughed in In-gong's imagination, and In-gong laughed as well.

The light continued. The white light from the Sanctuary wrapped around In-gong. It became one with the power of Conquest and grew even more. The red dragon used his magic power. Simultaneously, In-gong also exuded an enormous magic power with an angry cry.

Everyone looked at In-gong, and it was accepted by all. The strongest person in the Demon World...

Protector of the Demon World... The demon king... In-gong was the one who took over the throne from the sura king, Mitra!

The magics of the red dragon collided with In-gong in midair. The tremendous collision created a vicious magic vortex in the air. However, this was just a skirmish. Each of the red dragon's seven heads had different powers.

In-gong wasn't watching quietly, and the protagonist brought all his strength together.

Felicia and Caitlin, who stood right beside In-gong, roared simultaneously. The two people awakened as apostles of Conquest. Felicia, who was on the verge of exhaustion from faster than the wind, laughed. Meanwhile, Caitlin raised up the full strength of her wilderness and revealed a beautiful beast-like person.

In fact, it wasn't just the two of them. Call had been used despite the fact that In-gong

hadn't cried out a name. The King's Knights gathered through In-gong's power. Nayatra looked around her with a surprised expression as a mighty magic power moved around her body. Her purple hair blew in the wind. Vandal was also reborn as an apostle. He grew to a huge size reminiscent of a giant. Karma, who had already experienced the apostle upgrade, dealt with her power skillfully, and many spirits gathered around her.

Silvan stood beside Felicia. The power of Conquest allowed him complete control over the fairy.

"My master."

"Master!"

The white woman said in a sweet voice, while Green Wind, who had become the goddess of the wind, cried out competitively.

"What a mess, a mess."

Carack laughed before blowing the horn again. It was to spread news to the whole Demon World that a new demon king had ascended. The black sky shook, and the white crack broke the red moon.

Chris burst out laughing. It was right before the decisive battle, but he couldn't help wanting to laugh. He envied Caitlin, Felicia, and Silvan who were gathered in one place. He should've closed his eyes and entered the King's Knights.

Anastasia admitted it. It was curiously comforting. Maybe she had known that this was going to happen. No, she had definitely known. She had guessed it since the moment she'd been saved by In-gong in Curtis.

A smile appeared on her face. Anastasia had thought she would be upset, but she wasn't. Baikal orabeoni's words were right. They weren't enemies, they were competitors. However, In-gong was just more suitable to becoming the demon king.

Then she remembered the words that Felicia and Caitlin always said.

'Shutra.

‘Truly, Shutra.’

Zephyr closed his eyes, simply accepting it. He was a prince of the Demon World and out of reach of War’s madness, Famine’s greed, and Death’s darkness. Zephyr was only responsible for his duties.

‘It’s okay, Zephyr is still the coolest to me! And keep this a secret, but you are better than Erebus! Kyah! It will be okay! I’m telling you!’

Altesia’s voice was heard in his head. She used message magic on such useless words, but Zephyr couldn’t help smiling.

Warrior Locke grabbed another sword while listening to the sound of the horn in the sky. Guardian Queian had given him another powerful sword which contained the magic of a dragon. The true Drakon Kechatulla had returned, but Locke was still a warrior of the Human World. Beatrice prayed while Carlov tied his hair up.

Seven pillars of light emerged from the red dragon’s seven heads. At the same time, In-gong and everyone else started to move. Rather than fleeing from the fearsome power of destruction, they faced it head on.

The sword duke wielded his sword. He cut through one pillar of light like he’d done with the tsunami of undead. Silvan and Felicia held hands and used the magic power of the fairy to block one light column.

Zephyr and Quanta blocked another pillar. Altesia and Beatrice used their miracles of light and darkness to crush one light pillar, while Locke roared and attacked another.

Five pillars of light were thwarted. One of the remaining two were handled by the queens. Sylvia’s and Titania’s powers twisted the trajectory of the light pillar, while Elaine concentrated the auras of the Blood Companions and destroyed the light pillar.

One pillar of light remained. In-gong rushed toward it as it extended straight to the Sanctuary. Caitlin followed In-gong. He moved through the air and aimed White Eagle at the giant pillar of light. Then Green Wind cried out with him!

“Absolute Area!”

It was White Eagle’s super special move! A brilliant green light collided with the

column of light and split it into hundreds of branches. The trajectory was reflected, and the branches aimed for the red dragon instead.

However, In-gong didn't stop. He reached for Caitlin's waist while casting another skill.

'Black Specter.'

He triggered the super special move of Night Watch, Violent Kaltein's equipment.

In-gong turned into blue smoke. There was the sound of hundreds of wings flapping as he rushed toward the red dragon.

Chapter 227

Myth #2

Hundreds of fragments from the light pillar scattered. Those that collided with the red dragon were destroyed.

Kwaaaaaang!

There was a loud burst of thunder. Then the dark blue smoke turned into a person again. In-gong couldn't completely narrow the distance to the red dragon as the magic power of the red dragon had pushed the blue smoke away.

The red dragon didn't stop there. As a result of his strong will, the black beasts leapt toward In-gong.

In-gong felt it too and had already been preparing for the next move the moment the blue smoke ended. He grasped the Warrior's Sword in his left hand.

The black beasts opened their mouths. It seemed like they were going to swallow In-gong in one breath. In-gong held Caitlin's waist tightly. He pulled her to him firmly and rotated his body. Wielding the Warrior's Sword in his hand, In-gong activated its super special move.

Beta emerged from the Warrior's Sword!

This was one of the hidden super special moves in Knight Saga. It was a technique which that was a simple thrust attack.

A white glow exploded from the blade and smashed the black beasts in one strike. The red dragon's magic power which pushed at In-gong was no exception. It left a big scar in the field of magic power.

In-gong smiled faintly. It was a pleasure to use the Warrior's Sword, but it wasn't just the joy. He was convinced the moment he used it. In-gong felt the mighty power of Guardian Queian from the Warrior's Sword. It was the same as the riders exercising

their power through their knights.

“Shutra!”

Caitlin suddenly exclaimed. The black beasts were pouncing again. Instead of answering, In-gong triggered Blink and penetrated through the gap in the magic field.

The red dragon stared at In-gong. Three of the seven heads were pointing at him. As In-gong got closer, he could feel the enormous size of the red dragon more strongly. Magic poured down from the sky. Two of the three heads aiming at In-gong gathered power in their mouths while the remaining one poured thousands of lightning strikes down toward In-gong.

Caitlin swallowed her breath. In-gong could feel her pulse because they were hugging so tightly. As In-gong raised his head, he didn't try to avoid it or to rush forward. He opened his inventory and released all his swords.

Kwaaaaaang!

The swords filled with divine power and collided with the lightning. Of course, it was impossible to aim for each lightning strike. It was a type of barrage—no, it was a sword explosion. The sword duke would've scolded him if he saw it, but In-gong needed to defeat the lightning.

He was blinded by a brilliant flash of light. It was the same for the red dragon and black beasts as well.

Then In-gong broke through the rain of lightning. He was now only dozens of meters away from the red dragon. The two heads tried to aim their breaths at In-gong, but he wasn't the only one here. There were others who had been waiting for a chance while making their way through the black beasts.

“In the name of the light!”

“I love you!”

Light Saintess Beatrice shouted. Altesia also shouted nonsense, but her faithfulness to Erebus was heard clearly.

A giant sword made of light was formed. From the ground, a black giant rose up and roared as it grabbed the sword of light.

It was the move of the two saintesses which had destroyed Arch Lich Shutenberg's magic circle. This one wasn't as large as the red dragon, but it was still huge. The giant, which was dozens of meters tall, wielded the sword of light and generated an enormous force.

Once again, the red dragon's magic field was torn. The red dragon had no choice but to shoot a breath at the incarnation of the gods. The sword of light and light pillar clashed. The black giant jumped as it chopped at the pillar of light, painting a truly spectacular sight.

The pillar of light struck the ground, and the ground shook while the giant fell and crushed the black beasts. At that moment, something happened which no one had been able to imagine.

The red dragon, which had been standing still like a statue, moved quickly. He rotated his body and swung his tail like a whip. It was truly a natural disaster. Struck by the tail, the black giant was completely smashed. The ground was also split apart like there was an earthquake.

Everybody on the ground swallowed hard. They couldn't even scream at the sight.

However, there were those who maintained their calm. The sword duke saw it clearly with his aura. The red dragon had forgotten about In-gong due to the black giant. The sword duke's eyes followed In-gong's figure moving in midair.

A sacred green flame was around him. The sacred flame he had received from the last flame burned the air around the red dragon.

In-gong narrowed the distance to the red dragon, and simultaneously, he began to think. Indeed, he had no solution to this problem if it was a huge red dragon. It was a huge opponent which was 100 times larger than In-gong. Wasn't it like a human stepping on an ant?

'But it is different.'

The red dragon had no flesh. Right now, this was just a giant soul shaped like a red

dragon. There was no need to focus on his heads.

From the very beginning, In-gong had been racing toward the red dragon's chest, instead of his seven heads. He pulled out the Warrior's Sword from his inventory and changed the arm holding Caitlin. He clenched his right fist and shouted happily,

"The finest princess battery!"

Caitlin hugged In-gong while feeling several emotions at once. There was a strange joy mixed in with resentment.

"Shutra is too much!"

Caitlin declared. At the same time, she focused all her strength on the Starlight Core. Her aura, which had been amplified after she'd been reborn as an apostle, rushed toward the Moonlight Core.

Currently, In-gong had only one aura heart. It was both the dragon heart and Moonlight Core, meaning it responded to the Starlight Core. This was just a dual core, but its power greatly exceeded that of the past penta-core.

Recorder Torres' El Ragra showed its strength. At the same time, Earth Quaker roared loudly, and Great Enkidu generously gave In-gong strength.

Kurarararara!

It was the roar of a dragon—Enkidu's call.

"Ohhhhhh!"

In-gong's fist pierced through the air, executing Earth Quaker's super special move, True Destruction! The destructive power hit the red dragon's chest. The vortex tore into the red dragon's chest significantly. In an instant, the vortex of destruction reached dozens of meters in diameter.

The red dragon screamed and wobbled from the pain. However, it was lacking. As In-gong had recognized, the red dragon wasn't a being made of flesh and blood. It was just a huge soul.

The red dragon emitted magic power. He pushed out with the power of destruction which could make the whole battlefield shatter. In-gong was swept out like he was caught in strong winds. The red dragon with a huge hole in his chest once again used magic. He tried to wipe out the battlefield with all types of disasters.

Black beasts emerged steadily from the ground, and the soldiers, who were defending the Sanctuary after the shield disappeared, did their best to fight against the beasts. Lightning, explosions, and flames struck these soldiers.

There was pandemonium everywhere. In the meantime, In-gong was holding Caitlin on the ground. He'd been struck by the red dragon's magic power, so his body was a mess. If Green Wind hadn't caught In-gong, he would've had a few broken bones.

However, In-gong was sure of something.

It had an effect. He had confirmed it with that blow.

'One more time. Just one more time!'

However, the red dragon didn't allow it. Although he was scattering disasters across the battlefield, the red dragon didn't forget In-gong. All seven heads aimed at In-gong.

'Master!'

Green Wind shouted hurriedly as she steered White Eagle and the two Black Eagles. She defended against the rain and lightning pouring down on In-gong while pushing out with strong winds against the force trying to choke him.

"Prince!"

Vandal came running while striking at the black beasts. Nayatra, who was riding on Vandal's shoulders, used her magic and cast spells at the attacks on In-gong.

"Run!"

This was the only thing they could do to buy a few minutes for In-gong. However, it was enough. In-gong was grateful to both of them. He took an elixir out of his inventory and swallowed it while climbing on White Eagle.

This time, Caitlin wasn't the only one with In-gong.

Felicia and Silvan followed right behind them. In-gong didn't have to look back to feel both of them. He grabbed Caitlin tightly around the waist and stared straight ahead. The distance of several hundred meters seemed quite far, but he had to cross it once again.

'Faster... Faster than the wind!'

Kwang!

White Eagle launched with a roar. The black beasts threw themselves to stop him, but it was unreasonable because there was someone who had run forward to coincide with In-gong.

The sword duke cut the air. The flash of light cleared away the black beasts, and a path was opened in front of In-gong.

White Eagle flew. The seven heads of the red dragon focused on In-gong, while three pillars of light aimed straight for In-gong.

This time, the queens didn't stay still. Chris raised his power of wilderness, while Sylvia cast magic on his back. They rushed along with the Blood Companions. Chris and the Blood Companions blocked their auras, while Sylvia and Elaine crushed the pillars of light.

Sylvia swallowed back her pain, and Elaine coughed up blood. This was the last time she could stop it. Another attempt wouldn't work. The two queens fell to the ground. Titania protected both of them as she pushed back the black beasts. She raised her eyes to see the back of the running In-gong.

The interference continued, but nobody managed to interfere with In-gong.

Felicia and Silvan followed behind him. Then Silvan sprang forward while grabbing Amita's sword. Just like the sword duke, he opened a path. Silvan used the lightning created by the fairy.

The red dragon's magic power reached out toward In-gong. The red dragon was trying to attack him directly, but Locke didn't allow it. He released all his aura and divine

power, producing a great sword.

The sword was dozens of meters large. It was around the size of the sword of light which Beatrice had created.

This sword of light struck the red dragon. No matter how powerful the red dragon was, it was impossible to ignore the attack which contained all of Locke's power. The red dragon's attention was drawn away as it used magic power to block the sword.

The red dragon destroyed the sword with the power of destruction. The distance between In-gong and the red dragon narrowed further. At that moment, Quanta fired her cold breath. The black beasts near the red dragon were frozen. Zephyr, who was standing on Quanta's head, fired at the red dragon.

It was a beautiful blow. The blow was close to the extreme nothingness the sword duke had shown. Three of the red dragon's seven heads were cut off. Zephyr exhausted all his aura and magic power doing it, but he was satisfied. He smiled faintly and shouted,

"Go!"

In-gong moved past Zephyr.

The red dragon roared angrily. Huge flames emerged from the dragon and tried to swallow up In-gong.

Felicia didn't tolerate it. A wall of her flames opposed the red dragon's flames. It was unreasonable to block the power of destruction, but she didn't care. She just needed to buy time... enough time for In-gong to break through.

Looking at In-gong's back, Felicia gathered all her magic power and pushed back the red dragon's fire. She used the last of her magic power to use recovery on In-gong. Felicia was more exhausted than all the times she'd used 'faster than the wind', but she was satisfied.

Caitlin once again delivered aura through the Starlight Core, while Green Wind pushed away the red dragon's flames with strong winds.

Then finally, In-gong found it. In the midst of the flames, he found the essence of the red dragon's soul which was being guarded by the Death Knight! The Death Knight

rushed toward In-gong, and death poured out violent emotions towards Conquest.

Conquest wrapped herself around In-gong. She was sad to be facing Death who felt both deadly love and hatred for her, but Conquest didn't step back.

The essence of the red dragon trembled tremendously. A terrible power of destruction could be felt from behind the Death Knight.

The Death Knight's swung his sword. In-gong stared straight forward and shouted,

"Carack!"

"Kuraha!"

It was Call. Carack cried out excitedly as he appeared in front of In-gong. He aimed his axe, which contained the pure power of Conquest, at the Death Knight. This was an unbelievable blow which made it possible for In-gong to go through. As Carack blocked the Death Knight, In-gong sprang off White Eagle!

"Go!"

Carack shouted. Caitlin remained on White Eagle and cried out the same thing. Green Wind pushed In-gong's back, while the white woman faced the red dragon with the power of Conquest.

The essence of the red dragon fired the power of destruction at In-gong. It was a tremendous force from the red dragon. However, In-gong wasn't afraid. There was an irreversible wound remaining on the essence of the red dragon. It prevented the red dragon from gaining a new flesh.

This was what would allow the red dragon to be destroyed.

In-gong pulled back his fist, and the power of Guardian Queian and Great Enkidu wrapped around In-gong. The power of the Sanctuary defended In-gong from the destructive power.

Then In-gong remembered. The move he'd been shown previously...

The last will left behind by the protector of the Demon World...

It finally sprouted from the depths of his heart. This was the last power given to In-gong who had been reborn as the guardian of the Demon World.

He only used one thing: The ultimate power which destroyed even destruction!

In-gong raised his fist and shouted the name of the move which would shatter the destruction that had tried to end the world 10,000 and 1,000 years ago.

“Extreme nothingness!”

The white light struck the essence of the red dragon.

Chapter 228

Final Chapter: In-gong

All the lights and sounds were violent. Then it suddenly became quiet. There was no screaming or crying. The demon king had succeeded in destroying the red dragon. He turned the soul of the one who craved destruction back to nothing.

The soul of the red dragon didn't disappear at once. The gigantic flame which had lost its essence burned gorgeously like the sun.

[Your level has risen.]
[Your level has risen.]
[Your level has risen.]
[Your level has risen.]
[Your level has ri...]
[The level of Heavenly Wine has risen.]
[The level of Heavenly Wine has risen.]
[The level of Divine Scent has risen.]
[The level of Divine Scent has risen.]
[Heavenly Wine has been promoted to Ultimate Heavenly Wine.]
[The level of Protagonist Body has risen.]
[The level of Conquest has risen.]
[The level of Pheromones has risen.]
[Pheromones has been promoted to Ruling Pheromones.]
[You have learnt Extreme Nothingness.]

The letters of white light and the voice of the woman came in succession. At a quick glance, he had gained more than 10 levels at once. The messages rose on top of each other, making them seem endless, while the woman's voice felt more difficult to hear than usual.

'What is this Ruling Pheromones?'

In-gong breathed out as he thought about it. His exhausted stamina, magic power. and

aura were immediately refreshed by the level-up effect. In-gong closed his eyes. Somehow, he felt like sleeping.

However, he couldn't sleep just yet. There were still things which needed to be cleaned up.

'Master!'

"Prince!"

"Shutra!"

Three voices called out behind him at the same time. There was no need for him to open the mini-map. In-gong raised a fist again, then he turned around as he felt the sadness and pain of the white woman.

The Death Knight was rushing away from Carack as his feelings were being conveyed through the blue aura around him. Resentment, rage, and hatred sought to choke the white woman's neck, and In-gong felt the Death Knight's own emotions amidst that vortex of emotion.

In-gong could see that the Death Knight was connected with the indigenous species. The Death Knight had been king of the indigenous species in the past, and the king had lived in deep regret and despair.

In-gong laughed, then he clashed with the Death Knight. In-gong's clenched fist reached the chest of the Death Knight, causing a deep dent.

The Death Knight then started crumbling slowly from his chest, like old wood crumbling after too much time passed. It was natural. The Death Knight had to endure for too long. He had already been broken in the fight against the demon king.

Then Death rose up, and Conquest pushed against Death. The two powers collided before Death disappeared in red flames. This time, In-gong sighed with relief. At this moment, something seemed to tackle In-gong.

"Shutra!"

It was Caitlin. In-gong hugged her and laughed. Then he understood why had she run

to him so urgently. He was able to keep standing in the air due to Conquest, but the flames filling the surroundings were disappearing, making her unable to maintain her position.

It was also true for Carack, who was falling.

“Kuweeeh?”

“Greenie!”

In-gong called out the abbreviated version of Green Wind’s name. It was a desperate call and Green Wind answered. White Eagle flew at maximum speed and caught the falling Carack.

“Hah.”

In-gong felt like he had lost 10 years of his life. The final boss and intermediate bosses were now defeated, so it should be a happy ending. However, it would’ve been a bittersweet ending if Carack had died.

‘There is no happy ending without Carack.’

In-gong laughed at the thought. Then Caitlin got his attention from her spot within In-gong’s arms. In-gong looked down with a questioning expression, only to see Caitlin’s face draw nearer.

He felt a moist and soft texture. Caitlin had touched her lips to his. Moreover, Caitlin’s eyes were wide open. He couldn’t help smiling at the ‘this isn’t it?’ expression on her face.

“What is it?”

In-gong asked as he withdrew. Caitlin pouted and said,

“I don’t know if it is delicious or not.”

In-gong laughed and kissed Caitlin again. Caitlin’s eyes widened at the completely different kiss, then she closed them and hugged In-gong tightly.

However, this didn't last long because White Eagle had started to roam around In-gong while carrying Carack.

"This isn't the time for that."

Carack said with a halfhearted expression. In-gong released Caitlin as she stared at him with blank eyes. Although Carack's pronunciation was messed up, he was able to understand the meaning.

The red flames had died down. Therefore, In-gong could see the battlefield. Despite the death of the red dragon, the black beasts were still fighting the soldiers.

He had thought the situation would be fixed after their creator, the red dragon, died. At that moment, both In-gong and Caitlin thought the same thing. They looked at each other and cried out in panicked voices.

"Felicia!"

"Felicia unni!"

Felicia had crashed into the ground after pushing In-gong and Caitlin forward. If the black beasts were still attacking, then her safety couldn't be guaranteed.

"Felicia!"

In-gong shouted again quickly. It was the same Call he had used to summon Carack. A crack opened in the air and Felicia appeared. She was exhausted and sweaty, but she didn't seem to have any big injuries.

In-gong reached out and embraced Felicia hurriedly. Felicia sighed with relief once she was in In-gong's arms and whispered in a small voice,

"Silvan."

Silvan had protected Felicia as always. From the sky, they watched the army fight against the black beasts.

"Prince."

Carack glanced at In-gong, who took a deep breath. He held Felicia and Caitlin with each arm, but he didn't put them down. In-gong rose up higher and passed down a command as the demon king.

'Retreat. Move away from the center of the battlefield.'

In-gong was just like the previous demon king. Sylvia felt pained at the memories, but everyone followed In-gong's words without any resistance. Elaine just laughed comfortably. As Silvan and the others moved away from the center, In-gong looked at the mini-map. The black beasts were gathered at the center of the battlefield. It was really a panorama of red dots.

In-gong took in a deep breath. As Caitlin and Felicia leaned their heads against In-gong's chest, he declared,

"I'll do it in one blow."

He was talking more to Caitlin than Felicia. Caitlin read In-gong's intentions and nodded.

In-gong stared at the air. As the new demon king, he built up a massive ball by adding magic power and aura, and Caitlin's aura transmitted to the Moonlight Core.

"Black Sun."

Of course, it wasn't exactly like Shutenberg's. If the destructive power was the same, then he wouldn't be able to use it. He would vaporize the army as well as the beasts.

This was a smaller version at Level one, but this was good enough. Caitlin hugged In-gong tighter as she looked at the mass of aura and magic power. Then he dropped the black sun to the ground.

A great silence swept the ground, and the army of black beasts was instantly gone.

[Your level has risen.]

The level up was as expected since he had also defeated the Death Knight. A white light appeared around In-gong as his magic power and aura were restored. However, unlike

In-gong, Caitlin's aura and stamina were still exhausted, so she couldn't help grumbling.

"Shutra is too much."

Then she leaned her head forward cutely like she was sleeping.

"Well, you are the same as always."

Carack nodded at the exhausted Felicia and Caitlin on both sides of In-gong. It really was a common sight.

"Prince, don't you care about the princesses?"

"Of course."

Carack clicked his tongue at In-gong's shameless answer while Green Wind appeared with a pout. In-gong wanted to pat Green Wind's head but both his hands were full. He felt sorry as he used Telekinesis to do it, but Green Wind still smiled happily.

'My master, look at the sky.'

The white woman's voice was heard. In-gong suddenly looked up at the sky. The last flames had disappeared and the blue sky could now be seen. The darkness was scattering and the red moon created by the red dragon's power had also disappeared.

As a Drakon Kechatulla, he was able to know this. However, it wasn't just that. The same phenomenon was happening throughout the Demon World, and In-gong could hear the giants and lizardmen.

In-gong's gaze moved to a place far away. He looked at the sky, but what he actually saw was the white woman deep in his soul. She was smiling with both joy and sorrow. Setting aside the red dragon, Death, War, and Famine were her lovers, friends, and siblings.

'I'm okay, my master. You have conquered me.'

The white woman said jokingly. In-gong smiled and looked down at the ground. Familiar faces appeared. Everyone was looking this way, except for Anastasia who was

desperate to hear news about Baikal in the north. Sylvia and Elaine had strange smiles on their faces.

In-gong exchanged looks with the sword duke before finally locking eyes with Locke and Zephyr. They were far away, but he could see both their expressions. Locke was smiling with satisfaction, while Zephyr nodded slowly before hugging Altesia, who was exhausted from her miracles.

It seemed like there was no need to worry. In-gong hugged Felicia and Caitlin tightly again. Despite it being on the verge of sexual harassment, Felicia didn't say anything while Caitlin complained about the pain.

In-gong descended slowly like he was walking on stairs. Despite defeating the red dragon and the Death Knight, not everything was over yet.

In-gong gazed at the pillar of light in the center of the Sanctuary. Then the white woman whispered in In-gong's ears,

'You can only talk to it once. Perhaps now is the only time. Do you want to talk?'

There was no reason to resist. No, this was a conversation that he needed to have, even if it was through force. It was at the Sanctuary's pillar of light, where the people of the indigenous species were located.

In-gong closed his eyes, and their minds were connected.

Chapter 229

Final Chapter: In-gong #2

It was a familiar darkness. This was the space where the white woman usually was. Everything was dark, but he could still see clearly.

In front of him stood the golden-crowned, white woman. However, she wasn't Conquest, and In-gong knew that instantly.

"Hello."

The woman said. Then she closed her eyes, and In-gong wondered about what he should call her.

"Indigenous species... should I call you that?"

"Yes, if you want. It wouldn't be bad to have a name that represents all of us."

They borrowed both this space and this form. In-gong let out a breath. The white woman smiled slightly like she sensed some of his fatigue. The two people sat facing each other on sofas.

"Is this your will? A sense of self."

In-gong asked with surprise. If they had an ego, then why hadn't they given any information until now? The indigenous species frowned like she was embarrassed and replied to In-gong's question in a soft voice,

"Normally, we just exist and have little will. It was difficult to talk to you without Conquest's help, so I borrowed her image and voice. This is just a temporary change to talk to you. After what we did to you... this is the least we can do."

The indigenous species had a wry smile on her face, but it didn't last long. She fixed her expression and opened her mouth again.

“I will answer your questions. Ask me anything you like.”

Finally, it was time to get some answers to his questions. There were many questions running through his head, but the one that popped out first was unexpected.

“Is the red dragon completely dead?”

It was a little strange since he had definitely felt it. After he used Extreme Nothingness, he had sensed the disappearance of the red dragon. However, the red dragon had come back once already. So, In-gong couldn't afford to be careless.

The indigenous species smiled at In-gong's question. She probably hadn't expected In-gong to ask such a question. Her eyes were still closed, but she seemed to gaze into the distance. Then she turned to face In-gong again and said,

“He was destroyed. One day a similar presence might appear, but for now, the threat has disappeared.”

The red dragon was the embodiment of destruction, so there was a possibility that a similar existence would appear again after a long time. However, not right now. It would clearly occur in a much longer time after In-gong was dead.

In-gong sighed with relief and stretched a little bit. He gazed at the indigenous species. Once again, an unexpected question popped out of his mouth.

“Were you the ones who called me?”

“That's right. But it wasn't just me. I want to explain a little to help you understand. Is that okay?”

It seemed like it would be a long story. In-gong pointed to his head.

“Can't you shoot it directly into my head like the sword duke?”

“Your spirit would be destroyed. We don't show it off, but we are vast.”

He understood. The person in front of him was made up of many souls.

“Then please explain.”

“I will.”

The indigenous species took a deep breath. Then as Conquest, she started to explain in a slightly stiff tone,

“10,000 years ago, all of the indigenous species became one. Just like the dark god Erebos, we became one of the pillars supporting this world. But unlike them, the indigenous species have willpower. Although it was weakened after we all became one, it still remained thousands of years later. The will to stop the destruction and protect this world, that is.”

The indigenous species’ hands on her lap slowly formed fists, then her face turned away again.

“The crisis was detected. Perhaps we sensed that the red dragon was alive outside the world. The former demon king, Mitra, also sensed this ominous feeling. He didn’t know for certain what it was, but he sensed it was the end.”

The demon king had been able to see the flow of fate, but that didn’t mean he had known exactly what the flow meant.

“We wanted someone to become one with Conquest and fight the red dragon. It was also aimed at helping Conquest escape from the fate of the end of the world. We came to the conclusion, along with Recorder Torres, that someone from outside this world was needed. A person who wasn’t touched in some way by the red dragon, the incarnation of destruction, or Conquest. Anybody who had been touched by the destruction wouldn’t be able to conquer Conquest perfectly.”

The elder dragons were divine beings. Even though the body was broken and the soul fragmented, Ainkel still sometimes expressed her will to In-gong. So, it wasn’t strange for a piece of Torres’ broken soul to unite with the indigenous species.

“Things started to lock together like the parts of a sophisticated machine. The son of the demon king who was born without a soul but had the potential to be reborn as a divine being, along with the soul from another world who could save Conquest from the fate of the end... Everything lined up.”

In-gong was convinced. It was because In-gong’s soul was added to Shutra’s body that

he could become like this. However, he suddenly had a question. Why had they picked In-gong? Why did it have to be him?

“You are a man who is really suited to become the Conquest Knight.”

The indigenous species said, and her smile comforted In-gong. This hadn't been just a coincidence but because he was suitable. Maybe he was the only one. It felt a bit strange, but it wasn't bad.

“In the end, it wasn't a game?”

After coming here, it didn't make sense that it was just a game. He had already heard a few stories about this world, and it was a completely different world from the game. The indigenous species nodded.

“It isn't clear what game you are talking about, but this is a different world from where you lived. I can only guess that there are peepers.”

“Peepers?”

“Recorder Torres shot out the records of our world in order to find you. One of them touched someone in your world, and he might have created a game that is similar to our world. And that story reached you. The moment you were summoned seemed to be a coincidence.”

That made sense. The difference he saw between the game and what he experienced in this world was probably due to such an error.

“Wait, then is time different between the worlds?”

Knight Saga had already come out 10 years before. However, In-gong had arrived at Knight Saga when the storyline of the game hadn't even occurred yet. Then time must be different if it was based on Torres' records. In order for there to be a story, there needed to be a time lag between the worlds.

“It does exist. However, it isn't that simple. For a while, our time was slower than your world, but now, it will be the opposite.”

In-gong was once again convinced. He immediately asked another question,

“If it isn’t a game system or a game world... what is Protagonist Correction?”

“You are the chosen saviour of our world. You can be called the protagonist of our world. It was just occasionally pushing your back, but is it strange that the world is helping you?”

In-gong nodded involuntarily. The world had helped him, literally making the Protagonist Correction.

“And for what you called the game system... It was the easiest way for you to understand your growth. It is more correct to say that your subconscious created the system, rather than us. Moreover, you had the power of Conquest. You might have already guessed, but it was due to the power of Conquest that you learnt the skills so quickly.”

He nodded again. It was certainly a convincing story. However, he then thought of something suddenly.

“Are you the voice I hear every time I level up?”

“Normally, it is impossible to talk to you like this. It is Conquest who delivered the voice to you.”

At that moment, In-gong imagined the white woman repeated reading ‘Your level has risen’ from a script in the darkness. He didn’t know if it actually happened, but he couldn’t help laughing.

“Why is Zephyr like that?”

“I don’t know what you are asking.”

In-gong then explained specifically. He told her about Zephyr’s awful actions in Knight Saga. The indigenous species frowned like she was sorting her thoughts before speaking.

“It is a story based on the records of our world, but it isn’t exactly the same. And maybe... the Zephyr in that story might be a Zephyr who was influenced by the four riders. Death and War were aiming for Zephyr. But thanks to your intervention, Zephyr

was able to avoid that first contact. Small changes piled up to cause big changes.”

In-gong thought about Gerard who had become the Famine Knight. Maybe Death and War really had caused Zephyr’s actions.

“Then there won’t be something like the Day of Massacre? Zephyr won’t cause a rebellion?”

“That is all up to Zephyr. A predetermined future doesn’t exist.”

The Zephyr right now was a rational and good prince of the Demon World, but there was no guarantee that he would submit quietly to In-gong. Although Zephyr wasn’t a brutal murderer like in Knight Saga, he was still a powerful man with great ambitions and strength.

However, In-gong wasn’t greatly troubled. It was only a short period of time, but the Zephyr he’d encountered wasn’t a match for him.

“Are all your questions answered now?”

“Well...”

In-gong nodded before suddenly standing up. He had almost forgotten to ask the most important thing.

“Can I return to my original world?”

Return... Just as the beings in this world were precious to him, the people in his previous world were as well, such as his parents and his friends.

The indigenous species shrugged slightly and said,

“It is hard at the moment. But it might be possible one day. The most difficult thing about moving through worlds is lining up the coordinates of your world and this world. Moving across worlds also requires a tremendous amount of magic power.”

In-gong had already secured the most important thing. His eyes shone while the indigenous species had a sorry expression on her face.

“I can give you the coordinates right now. I’m sorry but I will have to leave everything else to you. Once I go to sleep this time, I probably won’t be able to wake up again. I should do as much as I can for you while I’m awake.”

In-gong was disappointed for a moment at the thought that returning was impossible. He didn’t hide his expression, which caused the indigenous species to laugh awkwardly.

“Don’t make such an expression. Although my words are somewhat shameless, aren’t you glad that you came to this world?”

“Huh?”

“You met Felicia and Caitlin. Carack and Green Wind as well. You met them and changed their fates. Perhaps if you didn’t appear in this world, there would be more events before the red dragon returned. You might have blocked a terrible future for them.”

The Day of Massacre and subjugation of the lycanthropes were things that could’ve happened. In-gong remembered the last he’d seen of Felicia and Caitlin in Knight Saga. He shuddered at the thought.

“I hate to admit it, but I am glad.”

In fact, it wasn’t just the two of them. It included Zephyr and all the children of the demon king. Sylvia and Elaine as well. If a future such as Knight Saga really unfolded, then it would’ve been disastrous for the Demon World. The war with the Human World would have been really devastating and truly like the end of the world.

The indigenous species smiled.

“Right? You also met beauties like Felicia and Caitlin. Moreover, you are now a king. Isn’t it like winning the lottery?”

“Who knows how my life would’ve turned out?”

How many times had In-gong struggled? The indigenous species shrugged at In-gong’s sharp words.

“I’m sorry. It is almost time for me to disappear.”

The indigenous species apologized. It seemed like she couldn’t say anything more using the white woman’s appearance. In-gong folded his arms while the indigenous species restored her expression again. She then spoke with an affectionate tone,

“Coincidence and inevitability meet to create fate.”

In-gong’s meeting with this world... the branches of all his bonds started from there.

“Thank you. Thank you for saving our world.”

The indigenous species got up from her seat and approached In-gong. Then she kissed In-gong’s forehead gently. It was a blessing from this world.

“May your destiny always be full of blessings.”

The indigenous species smiled. Then white light filled darkness.

In-gong opened his eyes. It was still the battlefield. Felicia was dozing off on In-gong’s chest, while Caitlin was sipping from an elixir In-gong had given her before.

“Shutra?”

Caitlin asked as In-gong suddenly raised his head. In-gong glanced back at her before turning his head.

“Carack.”

“What is it?”

“I’m here because of you.”

“What does that mean?”

Carack looked confused, but In-gong didn’t answer. Instead, he turned to Felicia and Caitlin within his arms. He pulled the two of them close to him again.

“Shutra?”

Caitlin asked with surprise while Felicia muttered about the pain. However, In-gong didn't release the strength in his arms.

“It's a good thing.”

“What?”

“Just... all of it.”

He had changed the ending so that this would be the future and not that terrible one he'd seen. In-gong smiled and kissed Caitlin. Then he also kissed Felicia's forehead several times. It was a sudden affection but the black beasts were cleared out, so Carack couldn't criticize him.

Carack clicked his tongue and said,

“Prince, do it moderately. 6th Princess can't stand properly.”

It was certain that Felicia and Caitlin needed to rest. Moreover, there was one more thing that In-gong had to take care of.

“Master, are you going to praise me? I have been waiting for a long time.”

Green Wind appeared with a pout before In-gong. In-gong stretched out the arm holding Caitlin and stroked Green Wind's head.

“Good?”

“Good.”

Green Wind hugged In-gong's neck, and Carack started laughing again.

In-gong's gaze moved to a place far away. He saw those heading in this direction. They were all welcome faces, yet it would still take them some time to arrive. In-gong waited for them and asked,

“The Demon King’s Palace, should I build it again?”

The new demon king needed to be crowned. Felicia nodded with a gloomy face as she was reminded of the demon king. In-gong held Felicia’s waist a little tighter and whispered,

“Then we will get married.”

Felicia hurriedly opened her fan, but it was useless. Caitlin hit In-gong’s chest on behalf of the blushing Felicia.

“Let’s go back first. After we rest, I’ll tell you everything.”

“Huh?”

Felicia blinked with confusion while Caitlin shook her head. Green Wind didn’t care about anything as she closed her eyes and clung to In-gong.

“Prince.”

Carack called out to In-gong. The one who In-gong had first seen when he opened his eyes in this world said to him,

“You did your best.”

“Yes, you too.”

What more was needed to be said? In-gong looked at the pillar of light where the indigenous species was located, then he looked back in the direction of the Demon King’s Palace.

A pleasant wind hit In-gong’s cheeks.

Epilogue

Chapter 230

Epilogue #1

The battle for the Sanctuary was over, but that was it. The attacks in the north and east were still going strong.

Thanks to this, In-gong and the other children of the demon king didn't have time to rest as they were forced to enter the battlefield.

In particular, the situation at the Aegis Gate in the north was serious after parts of the walls had collapsed. It managed to be protected thanks to Baikal and the captains, but the situation was still very precarious.

Since the new demon king wasn't officially crowned yet, the royal children and queens gathered to take defensive measures. After a short debate, it was decided where the royal children and the captains would be dispatched.

Silvan and Felicia were sent to the west. Chris and Caitlin headed east, while Zephyr and Anastasia accompanied the two captains to the north. In-gong would visit the north, east, and west in a sequential order. As the next demon king, it was necessary for In-gong to look at all three battlefields.

It took more than two months to defeat all the barbarians in the northeast. The battle with the northern barbarians, who had partially destroyed the Aegis Gate, was particularly fierce, but the Aegis Gate was defended thanks to all four captains, Baikal, Zephyr, Anastasia, and In-gong.

Three months after the battle against the red dragon, In-gong was finally able to return to the center. Baikal remained in the north to restore the Aegis Gate, but he declared his support for In-gong just before In-gong left.

Even though In-gong's position as the next demon king was almost certain, the support of Baikal, as the eldest son and leader of one of the three factions, was huge. The succession of the new demon king occurred smoothly. There was no civil war between princes, as suggested by Baikal's support.

Anastasia also expressed her support. Zephyr didn't make a declaration, but two of the three factions already supported In-gong, so his silence was sufficient. After In-gong returned to the area where the Demon King's Palace was being rebuilt, he met up with Warrior Locke.

Locke had been on almost all the battlefields in the last three months. They watched each other's back and now knew how to read each other.

Therefore, Locke immediately understood why In-gong had called him. The two men faced each other under the night sky with the bright moon and laughed awkwardly. In-gong was the one to open his mouth first.

"Now, I think this is occurring a little bit late."

In-gong was holding the Warrior's Sword in his hand. Rather than taking the sword right away, Locke folded his arms and asked with narrowed eyes,

"Are you returning it?"

"It is because the name is the same as the brave warrior."

In-gong could keep it, but it felt uncomfortable. Locke was the brave warrior in Knight Saga. Moreover, In-gong was more of a fists martial artist, so he didn't have much use for it.

Locke suddenly laughed at In-gong's words.

"Isn't it too late to say this?"

"The sword is too good, so I am giving it back."

In-gong responded mischievously to the question. Locke and In-gong looked at each other and laughed.

"Okay, then I will hand the name to you."

"Locke?"

Locke sighed at In-gong's surprised response. He closed his eyes for a moment before saying,

"As you said, this is the Warrior's Sword. It matches the one who defeated the red dragon and defended the peace."

A warrior wasn't simply a job, nor was it a name which could be self-styled. Heroes and warriors were people who broke the crisis. They defended peace. Locke thought that the name befitted In-gong more than him.

"Instead of taking it, please come to the Human World and help me if anything happens. Just like my business trip this time."

"Well, there are still problems in that area."

In-gong smiled as he recalled the Human World in Knight Saga and nodded. After talking to the indigenous species, he knew that this world wasn't quite like Knight Saga. However, a lot of the basic information coincided. Unlike the Demon World where In-gong had changed many things, it was likely that the Human World was more similar to Knight Saga.

'Rebellions, civil war, mad apostles who want to call down the god of destruction... there are many things.'

The number of events was actually more than in the Demon World. Locke frowned as he looked at In-gong.

"What do you mean by problems?"

"Nothing. I guess I'll be busy in the future."

In-gong placed the Warrior's Sword into his inventory and held out a hand for Locke to shake. This time, Locke grabbed In-gong's hand without any resistance.

"Thanks again. I enjoyed our time together."

"Yes, I did as well."

They exchanged warm glances and shook hands a few times, seeming to convey their

hearts through the tight grip. If Locke returned to the Human World straight away, this would've been perfect. However, Locke didn't show any signs of going back. In-gong asked somewhat awkwardly,

"But aren't you returning to the Human World?"

"I will go with you for now. In the near future, you will be crowned. I have to see my friend become the king. This is a great moment, so how can I miss it? I don't have to return to the Human World immediately."

In-gong had to hear it again. It was a situation where the fighting had just ended. Locke wasn't a mercenary, but In-gong still felt uncomfortable.

Locke knocked his shoulders against In-gong's.

"Then let's go back. Carack will ask why two men are meeting in the middle of the night."

"Um, yes."

In-gong nodded and headed back to his accommodations with Locke. It was awkward, but it seemed more awkward to say anything, so In-gong and Locke walked in silence.

All the queens were the leaders of their species except for 1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros. Due to this, they were more likely to stay at their own palaces instead of the Demon King's Palace.

However, this past month was different. The queens didn't stay in the Demon King's Palace but a small castle they built near it. The rebuilding of the new palace was an issue, but there also wasn't much time left until the coronation.

The day after his conversation with Locke, In-gong was sitting down with a very uncomfortable expression. A white table was set up in the indoor garden, with In-gong being the only male present.

The remaining people were all females. They were also composed of queens and princesses.

“Well, it makes sense to arrange the marriages now. It is a good thing.”

Anastasia said as she put down her cup. After declaring her support for In-gong as the next demon king, her attitude and tone had become lighter than before. It felt like a heavy load had been put down.

In-gong remained silent, and it was the same for Felicia and Caitlin, who were sitting next to 3rd Queen Sylvia Doomblade and 4th Queen Elaine Moonlight respectively. Both of Felicia and Caitlin had red cheeks.

Anastasia glanced at both of them before looking back at In-gong. Then she threw a bomb in her usual elegant manner.

“But who will be the 1st Queen among the two of them?”

It was almost certain that Felicia and Caitlin would become In-gong’s queens. Then the question was who would become the 1st Queen?

‘Master, this is a strange atmosphere.’

Green Wind murmured as she appeared in her semi-solid state. The white woman also whispered in In-gong’s ears,

‘It would be better to stay quiet at this time, my master.’

It was really proper advice, so In-gong did as she said. As In-gong remained silent, Felicia and Caitlin looked at each other with subtle expressions. Felicia was the first one to open her mouth.

“Uh... aren’t I older?”

Felicia sent a glance asking, ‘Is it okay?’ to Caitlin. Caitlin puffed up slightly before muttering in a small voice.

“Unni is cheap.”

Caitlin didn’t intend to step back. No matter what anyone said, this was about being in the 1st position. Naturally, it would be preferred over 2nd position.

The queens just smiled with relaxed faces at Felicia and Caitlin's cute quarrel. 2nd Queen Titania sighed and said,

"Age doesn't make much sense when it comes to the position of the queens. It isn't listed by age."

In fact, 1st Queen Aishar was younger than 2nd Queen Titania.

Felicia and Caitlin alternated between being apologetic and happy at Titania's words. However, that only lasted for a second. Just like Anastasia, Titania threw a bomb with a smiling face.

"But if it is age... Anastasia, what do you think? Don't you want to be the 1st Queen?"

The dark elves and lycanthropes, who had the 3rd Queen and 4th Queen, were once again in the process of setting up queens. As queen of the succubi, Titania could just sit back and clap. She said it like a joke, but Anastasia wasn't confused. It was obvious that they had already discussed it to some extent. The other queens had also expected it somewhat.

"Then should I be a candidate for Shutra's queen? Shutra, what do you think?"

Anastasia smiled elegantly at In-gong. Felicia and Caitlin looked at In-gong simultaneously, while Green Wind also looked down at In-gong.

"Uh, yes...?"

Anastasia as a queen? It was something he had never thought about, so In-gong needed time to think. Whether it was for political reasons or something else, it wasn't just a joke.

"Actually, there is a better suggestion."

Titania said suddenly as tensions escalated. She shrugged lightly as everyone's eyes turned to her again.

"If you are planning politically motivated marriages, wouldn't it be better to marry the rulers of each species? What do you think, Shutra?"

“Uh, euh, huh?”

In-gong blinked with confusion as he didn't understand what she was talking about for a moment, hence his confused reply. What did she mean?

Elaine giggled as Anastasia and the other princesses stared in shock.

“That is a good idea, although it is unprecedented in history. Isn't this the right answer when approaching it from a political point of view? Sylvia, what do you think?”

“Stop joking around.”

Sylvia said rationally with narrowed eyes. Felicia and Caitlin sighed at her words, while Elaine pouted with vexation.

“Oh, it was so much fun.”

Then she winked at In-gong. In-gong tried to ignore Elaine's gaze, but Titania added more mean words.

“Shutra, don't miss me too much.”

In-gong didn't know what to do and chose the silent path. However, silence wasn't the correct answer as Felicia's eyes narrowed and Caitlin puffed up angrily.

‘My master, it isn't good to be too quiet.’

‘Master, I agree with the thieving cat.’

In-gong was smarting from everyone's looks. He hadn't done anything wrong, so why were things like this?

‘Carack, I miss you right now.’

In-gong lifted his cup as he remembered Carack's smiling face. He wanted to use Call to summon Carack, but he couldn't.

‘Count’ Carack, the close aide of the next demon king, had returned to his hometown

with his wives. It was the first vacation Carack had taken since meeting In-gong, so he couldn't interfere.

“Shutra, who will be your 1st Queen?”

Anastasia asked elegantly and In-gong laughed awkwardly as all eyes looked at him.

Chapter 231

Epilogue #2

“The coronation is soon.”

“The wedding will be soon.”

Silvan and Chris stood side by side in the temporary Demon King’s Palace. Normally, they would be awkward standing together, but today was a bit different. The two people stood with comfortable expressions.

“How surprising.”

“What?” Silvan asked.

Then Chris shrugged and spoke with playful eyes, “I thought you would be crying due to Felicia ignoring you.”

Silvan was truly an idiot when it came to his sister. Rather than getting angry, Silvan just laughed and responded in a similar manner.

“Don’t you feel the same way?”

Chris also treasured his sister. No, Chris treated her more like his daughter than his little sister. He was truly overprotective. It was surprising that he had ever let her onto the battlefield. It was an effective counterattack, but Chris just scoffed.

“You might have forgotten, but I was the one to propose the marriage to Shutra.”

“Yes, you were the villain. Bad person.”

Silvan and Chris laughed like idiots. It had been a long time since they could stand side by side and exchange jokes. Then Chris took a deep breath. He looked at Silvan’s golden eyes which weren’t covered with an eyepatch and asked unconsciously,

“Oh, can you control it now?”

“Somewhat,” Silvan replied with a grin.

Chris nodded at the reply. “Then it is okay.”

It had already been 10 years since the incident. Moreover, it hadn’t been intentional. Chris hadn’t wanted to admit it, but it hadn’t been Silvan’s fault.

As a child, Silvan’s fairy had gone wild and almost killed Caitlin and Chris. It had been such a great shock that Silvan and Caitlin didn’t remember what had happened, but Chris did. It had been an accident. Fortunately, there had been no casualties, nor had it caused tension between 3rd Queen Sylvia and 4th Queen Elaine. However, Chris never forgave Silvan after that, until now.

When had this change of heart occurred? Was it when Silvan showed he could control the fairy? Or when they became active in the same faction?

Chris recalled the dark elves’ Sky Forest. The image of Silvan rushing to save people by using the fairy came to mind.

“By the way...”

Silvan suddenly opened his mouth. Chris turned around and grinned. Silvan had the same expression he always showed Felicia.

“Doesn’t Felicia look fantastic as a bride?”

There was no doubt about it. Chris frowned but soon smiled. He spoke with a strong tone,

“Caitlin is cuter.”

Absolutely. The two fools looked at each other and laughed.

The reconstruction work was continuing at the Demon King’s Palace. It had only been a few months since they’d started construction, but the shape of the castle was already

appearing thanks to the enormous number of people helping.

“It still seems like it will take a long time.”

“It is because the Demon King’s Palace is a large city. It will take a few years to restore its old appearance.” Vandal, who was a newly appointed captain of the royal guards, was wearing flashy armour. He wanted to take it off all the time, but his position as a captain didn’t allow him to do so.

Standing next to Vandal was the beautiful succubus, Nayatra. She wore neat clothing which signified she was part of the Demon King’s Intelligence Agency, but she would soon form a new organization.

Vandal looked around the construction site and sighed again.

“The coronation is in a month... It seems like it would be better to celebrate it elsewhere.”

The construction speed was fairly fast, but as Nayatra said, the Demon King’s Palace was a big city. There wasn’t much which could be done in a month. Perhaps the limit was the area around the Black Castle where the ceremony would be held.

Nayatra nodded in agreement, but her mouth turned slightly downwards.

“It is because the palace is a symbol. Apart from the Sanctuary, this is the only place where we can have the ceremony.”

“It can’t be helped.”

Eventually, Vandal was convinced again. The palaces of the queens were luxurious and beautiful enough to celebrate the ceremonies, but they were too many queens. Picking one of their palaces would offend the others. Politics was a complicated thing.

Vandal shook his head to get rid of the complicated thoughts and turned to Nayatra. “Is your work going well?”

He was asking about a specific thing, and Nayatra understood. She replied with slightly pouted lips,

“Well, there is progress. The queens are overcrowded, but it seems possible to be a concubine.”

Unfortunately, her rivals were too powerful. Moreover, the position of queen wasn't something which could be achieved through love alone. She needed strong supporters, but Nayatra didn't have anyone. Additionally, according to information collected by Nayatra, it was undisputed that Anastasia would be crowned as 1st Queen. It was tradition for other succubi to become the concubines. Originally, the concubines of the demon king were the species which lacked the resources to establish a queen.

Although it was a story without any romance, the queens and concubines were the definition of political maneuvering. Cases like the former demon king and the 3rd Queen, or In-gong, Caitlin and Felicia were rare cases.

Vandal gazed at Nayatra with a sorry expression and said,

“It is sad.”

“It is realistic.”

Simply meeting the prince was enough of a miracle. A charming smile appeared on Nayatra's face.

“There is a high chance of winning. I already have a strong relationship with Prince—no, the demon king.”

Nayatra said with confidence.

In-gong's story was frankly unbelievable. It was difficult to understand about the concept of a game.

However, she had to believe it, and she was very satisfied with the things he'd told her about herself. Those in the Demon King's Palace who knew the 'truth' about In-gong could be counted on one hand.

“Well, as long as you don't dislike it. I'll cheer you on.”

“Captain, thank you for the support.”

Vandal burst out laughing at Nayatra's cool answer. It was a louder laugh than usual, so Nayatra grinned.

"What is it?"

"I feel like you are really familiar."

It was as if there was a chain of fate between them.

Nayatra laughed as she recalled In-gong's story and said coyly,

"I do as well, but you know that I'm not going to fall in love with you, right?"

"Don't worry. I am not Carack."

He was an orc, but his wives weren't orcs.

"That's right."

Nayatra once again agreed. It was pleasant to hear the sound of hammering as the sun set.

Time passed quickly. After a month of vacation, Carack returned with his wives. In-gong felt reassured after seeing Carack's relaxed face.

Invitations were dispatched all over the Demon World for the coronation. Baikal, who was responsible for the restoration of the Aegis Gate, as well as Victor returned after nearly half a year in the west.

Victor, who had been alone during the events which determined the destiny of the Demon World, became a strange presence in the new kingdom, but nobody was concerned.

There was a lively atmosphere due to the marriage ceremonies which would occur one month after the coronation. The wedding would be held three times in a row, so there would be a festive atmosphere for a few months.

During the night before the coronation...

In-gong stood next to Zephyr on a dark terrace.

Among the people who led the three factions of the Demon King's Palace, Zephyr hadn't declared support for In-gong, but it was enough that he showed up today. This alone expressed his intentions.

"Demon king... No, it is enough if Abamama had already decided it."

Zephyr, who had been the most powerful prince until In-gong appeared, knew many things. He knew about the demon king handing over the Seed of Extreme Nothingness, Caitlin's birth secret, and even the fact that In-gong wasn't the real son of the demon king.

However, he hadn't said anything until this day. Zephyr had kept quiet. It was due to the previous demon king.

Zephyr was a proud member of the Demon World's royal family. He had no desire to challenge his father's will. Moreover, he had one belief.

"The demon king should be the strongest person in the Demon World. The demon king is the one who protects the Demon World."

It was why Zephyr had returned.

In-gong quietly smiled at Zephyr's story. He tried to hold it back, but the corners of his mouth curled up. Zephyr frowned at the sight.

"Be vigilant. You need to maintain your position as the strongest."

This was a warning that things might be different if Zephyr became stronger, but In-gong's smile stayed. It wasn't because In-gong was confident that, as a descended god, he could beat Zephyr.

'It is great.'

In-gong was standing next to Zephyr. It was difficult to compare this Zephyr to the brutal killer who had caused the Day of Massacre in the game. As In-gong continued

to smile, Zephyr narrowed his eyes with a worried expression. His choice had been made in this meeting.

In-gong laughed and relieved Zephyr's worry.

The night passed by, and the morning of the coronation dawned brightly.

Everybody was gathered in the Demon King's Palace. Lords, various officials, and influential figures from other areas were lined up on the left and right of the red carpet leading up to the elevated altar.

As In-gong sat in the waiting room, he looked at a welcome face. They were outdoors, not indoors, and many things were different, but he couldn't help feeling nostalgic.

"These clothes are still tight."

Carack, who wore a black suit, said as he touched his neck. Instead of answering, In-gong stood up.

"9th Prince's entry."

Isabella called from the podium. It was the last time he would officially be called the 9th Prince. This wasn't a bad thing, but he couldn't help feeling regret.

As In-gong stepped on the red carpet, Carack followed quietly behind him, and those on the left and right bowed their heads.

In-gong saw Ferocious Eyes and Vandal. He also saw Nayatra and the other children of the concubines.

The finely dressed Felicia, Caitlin, and Anastasia were waiting at the altar. Felicia was wearing a red dress with a high degree of exposure as always, while Caitlin wore a blue dress which gave off a cute feeling. It was due to Chris' influence that her shoulders were covered up.

Anastasia, standing beside them, was dressed in white and looked like an elegant goddess.

Felicia's smiling eyes could be seen above her fan. Caitlin laughed brightly, while Anastasia smiled and moved a little closer to In-gong. The sword duke was standing close to the altar with a crown in his hands.

It was a new crown which Amita had created just for today. Amita was a slave to the Heavenly Wine as always, so they had made it despite their tail thumping against the ground. It was a joyful day, so In-gong had provided Amita with enough Heavenly Wine to make them smile happily.

The effect continued on. Despite wearing a collar, Amita was shaking their tail with a happy face from where they stood by the sword duke's feet. Behind Amita and the sword duke, Daphne was smiling.

"Go."

Carack stopped in front of the altar and said in a small voice. In-gong looked at Carack before nodding. Then In-gong stepped onto the altar. Felicia, Caitlin, and Anastasia walked behind In-gong as he followed the sword duke toward the highest point of the altar.

The throne of the demon king...

In-gong had inherited it after Mitra. The previous demon king had always been silent but never heartless. Rather, he was a warm-hearted person.

The Protector of the Demon World... Mitra was the Watcher of the Demon World.

Felicia's eyes were red. In-gong gently wiped at Felicia's eyes before standing before his throne. He then looked out over the Demon King's Palace.

"Master, how great."

Green Wind said as she suddenly appeared. Due to being upgraded to an apostle for this occasion, she looked like a goddess. Although Green Wind wasn't a queen or concubine, she was sensitive to the occasion. It was important for her to be with In-gong.

"My master."

The white woman with a golden crown appeared in front of In-gong and took the crown from the sword duke. She stared directly at In-gong and declared in a soft voice,

“Punishment, obedience, governance.”

It was the true power of Conquest. The white woman bowed to In-gong, then she placed the golden crown on his head.

This was the birth of the new demon king. The queens of the former demon king looked at In-gong with a mixture of regret and joy. Chris and Silvan applauded loudly, while Baikal smiled. Victor clapped with an awkward expression, but no one paid attention to him. Clearly, things were still awkward with him.

Zephyr gave a wry smile and clapped. Altesia laughed and pulled at his arms, while Locke stood next to Zephyr in silence.

“In-gong.”

Felicia said, grasping In-gong’s arms gently. In-gong smiled at her uncomfortable tone and said,

“Don’t overdo it.”

“Yes, Shutra.”

She had heard all about it from In-gong, but nothing had changed. In-gong was still the In-gong whom she’d encountered at the Red Lightning tribe. He was the person whom Felicia had loved from beginning to end.

Caitlin saw what Felicia was doing and pulled at In-gong’s other arm. In-gong laughed and asked Caitlin,

“Noona, can I request it just this once?”

It seemed appropriate to hear it at this moment. Felicia laughed as she understood what he was asking for. Green Wind looked at them with discontent, while Anastasia shook her head.

Caitlin's cheeks became slightly red at In-gong's request. It was embarrassing to be asked to do it.

"Shutra is amazing."

Caitlin muttered in a low voice, but she was smiling brightly.

In-gong kissed Caitlin's forehead. Then after kissing Felicia as well, In-gong looked up at the sky.

It was a happy ending which completely broke the ending of Knight Saga. He had crushed that ending with his own hands.

In-gong grinned.

Extra notes:

Breakers is officially complete!!!

Thank for you my editor LD, who has been with me since the beginning of the story and has managed to do everything I asked, no matter how crazy. Thank you to the readers for following this work until the end. For all the patrons who donated, I truly appreciate all of it.

This might not be the full end, as the author has expressed interest in writing some side stories.

So I hope to see you all on my next two works, which will be releasing sometime next week. If you click the next chapter link, you will be directed to a teaser of one of the stories.

Enjoy and thank you again~

- Rainbow Turtle

Side Stories

Breakers SS #1

Anastasia's Day

It was afternoon, two days after the coronation of the new demon king. The three queens of the new demon king, who were the princesses of the former demon king, had gathered in one place.

They were in a well-decorated room. The ceiling was high and had a little bit of a dreary look, but the thick carpet and various decorations gave it a cozy feeling. As the princesses sat opposite each other on a round table filled with sweets and tea, two of them were arguing.

4th Princess Anastasia Nekrion, who was to be the 1st Queen, watched her sisters with a somewhat relaxed face.

“Since Anastasia unni is to be 1st Queen, shouldn't the next oldest be the 2nd?”

Felicia said with a smile. However, Caitlin immediately puffed up in response.

“Unni is petty.”

It was because being 2nd was better than being 3rd, just like being 1st was better than being 2nd. The dark elves and the lycanthropes had forces of almost equal size, and they also had a similar degree of influence in the Demon King's Palace. Therefore, it wasn't easy to set the order of the king's favour.

‘The other person is Shutra.’

‘Shutra’ was the magic word here as well.

Anastasia reached for her teacup elegantly and sighed.

“Just do rock paper scissors. Or draw lots.”

Both Felicia and Caitlin puffed up at Anastasia's suggestion. In fact, they had good

reasons for it. Anastasia had suddenly taken the spot of 1st Queen. The reason why Anastasia was the 1st Queen was simple.

One, the power of the nightmares was stronger than the dark elves and lycanthropes. Two, 3rd Queen Sylvia and 4th Queen Elaine had accepted 2nd Queen Titania's offer. In other words, the queens had discussed among themselves and made Anastasia 1st Queen.

Felicia and Caitlin wanted to protest, but it couldn't be helped. This was what a royal marriage was; a royal marriage couldn't be established with affection alone. Anastasia ignored her younger sisters' disgruntled eyes and asked again,

"Do Silvan and Chris have any opinions on this?"

"They wanted to duel with each other to decide."

Felicia answered with a sigh, causing Caitlin to sigh as well. Anastasia laughed.

"Those children."

Chris, who was normally cold, was losing his rationality for Caitlin's sake. There was no need to mention Silvan. Anastasia thought about how Silvan and Chris earnestly wanted to duel and couldn't help smiling again.

"Princess Caitlin, it is ready."

A maid, Aphrasa, emerged from behind a curtain and said politely. The reason why the new queens had gathered here wasn't to decide the 2nd Queen and 3rd Queen but to prepare Caitlin's new wardrobe. It was significant since the dimensions would also be used for her wedding dress.

"Go."

"Yes."

Felicia said with a wide smile, causing Caitlin to nod. Caitlin was very glad to be picking new clothes without Chris' intervention.

'They fought so hard until now.'

Anastasia covered her mouth with the teacup. In fact, this wasn't an issue in the first place because the relationship between the two people was too good. It was highly likely that the order of the 2nd Queen and 3rd Queen would be resolved soon enough.

As Caitlin moved beyond the curtain, Felicia sighed once again. She took a sip of the tea, straightened her posture, and gazed at Anastasia. Caitlin wouldn't be back for a while. It was time for political talk, not a chat between sisters.

"Do you know?"

Anastasia said as she lowered her cup. Felicia raised her eyebrows and replied carefully,

"Draconian... the 4th Queen?"

Currently, it was set that Anastasia, Felicia, and Caitlin would be queens. However, it was easy to guess that there would soon be a 4th Queen. Among the species which already had queens, the draconians were the only ones without a queen.

"The most likely candidate for the 4th Queen is Leticia. Do you know who that is?"

"Baikal orabeoni's cousin?"

"Yes, the only child of the draconian king's eldest son."

At present, the draconians were led by King Zanskal, Baikal's and Zephyr's grandfather. If it was the daughter of his eldest son, it wasn't an exaggeration to call her the best draconian candidate. However, Felicia frowned and complained,

"But she is too old."

According to what Felicia remembered, Leticia was 33 years old. In-gong was only 15, so that was more than double his age. However, Anastasia just laughed.

"The draconians are long-lived. It isn't like us mixed-bloods, but their growth is slow... Just looking at appearance, she isn't much different from Caitlin."

Felicia's eyes widened at Anastasia's words.

“Have you seen her?”

“Yes.”

Anastasia was the leader of one of the three factions, so she couldn't miss out on any information about the draconians.

‘If Baikal orabeoni or Zephyr orabeoni had become the demon king... Leticia would probably have become the 1st Queen.’

The draconian king had calculated that both the demon king and queen would be from his own blood. However, all those plans had been broken abruptly because of Shutra.

“So, is she pretty?”

Felicia asked with a hint of irritation in her voice. Anastasia smiled gently and said something else instead.

“The story is still below the surface, but it will soon be formalized. Since the 1st, 2nd, and 3rd Queens were decided at almost the same time, they don't want the 4th Queen to be too late.”

“Pretty?”

In the end, Anastasia couldn't hold back her laughter.

“Don't worry, you are the prettiest.”

Realizing she was acting like a child, Felicia quickly covered her face with her fan at Anastasia's words. Anastasia changed the direction of the story instead of embarrassing her little sister more.

“Baikal orabeoni and Zephyr orabeoni also need to be given new titles.”

“Like Grand Dukes?”

“Yes, otherwise there will still be people who think they deserve to be the demon king.”

“But Baikal orabeoni and Zephyr orabeoni both stepped down.”

“They did. But that is just their opinion. The draconians, including the draconian king, don’t want to accept the situation.”

Felicia understood their feelings, but it couldn’t be helped.

“Shutra saved the Demon World. He killed Abamama’s enemies.”

As Felicia spoke in a voice filled with suppressed anger, Anastasia shrugged.

“That’s right. That is a fact. But... ironically, the problem is that the red dragon was defeated too quickly.

It didn’t make sense at first glance. However, Felicia understood right away and bit her lips.

“The red dragon would’ve surely destroyed the Demon World. Without Shutra, the Sanctuary would’ve been eliminated and the Demon World destroyed.”

Felicia tried to protest, but it was useless. Anastasia closed her eyes gently and responded,

“But very few people know about the Sanctuary. The whole fight against the red dragon was too small for everyone in the Demon World to see, especially the draconians fighting at the Aegis Gate.”

The red dragon had certainly been a mighty enemy. He had murdered the demon king and destroyed the Demon King’s Palace. If left alone, he would’ve surely destroyed the Sanctuary and turned the Demon World back into a barren land.

However, the destruction of the red dragon had been limited to the Demon King’s Palace. The damage had been minimized by defeating the red dragon early, but the problem was that only a small number of people had felt the threat of the red dragon.

This was the reason why the draconians were reacting this way. They didn’t know how strong the red dragon had been, nor did they understand how strong In-gong was to have defeated the red dragon. Most of all, they had no idea about how great the battle that day had been.

“Then... is Unni saying there should be more destruction of the Demon World?”

Felicia asked in a sharp tone. However, Anastasia went on to reply with an affectionate tone, like she was trying to soothe Felicia.

“I don’t want it. But it would’ve made dealing with the draconians easier. That is just the way it is.”

Anastasia finished talking and gazed at Felicia quietly. Felicia’s expression was bad, but she eventually nodded. It wasn’t Anastasia’s fault anyway. The draconians were the ones who were thinking like this.

Anastasia opened her mouth again and said briefly,

“Baikal orabeoni and Zephyr orabeoni will do their best to help. Even in the worst case scenario, a civil war won’t happen. But we need to throw a carrot to the draconians. Even if we refuse to give the title of Grand Duke, we can’t refuse a 4th Queen. Maybe they thought about it and that’s why they brought up the story about the titles.”

“Hah...”

Felicia understood. She understood, so she couldn’t refute it, which made her more frustrated. Anastasia gently brushed back Felicia’s hair and smiled slightly.

“Felicia, this is just the start. I don’t know about queens, but won’t there probably be more concubines in the future?”

The previous demon king had over 10 concubines. It wasn’t an exaggeration to say that the fate of the demon king was to make an alliance with the leaders of each species. All the previous demon kings were like that.

Felicia’s face creased even more, but Anastasia continued.

“Well, it is still a long time away.’

The age of the demon king was only 15 years old, while according to his mental age, he was only in his early 20s.

“Unni.”

Just then, a youthful voice was heard from beyond the curtain. Caitlin, who had changed clothes, twirled in front of Felicia and Anastasia. Felicia and Anastasia examined Caitlin’s clothes with serious eyes. It was a blue dress with a radical design which revealed some cleavage, unlike Caitlin’s usual dressing.

Felicia narrowed her eyes and said,

“It is too much. What did you place on her?”

“Why? It’s cool and looks good. Cute.”

‘Can you say that when you are wearing those clothes? Just that piece of cloth?’

Anastasia swallowed the words in her throat. Caitlin’s dress was essentially similar to what Felicia was wearing. There was cleavage and the shirt was short, revealing her thighs. The back was also open.

However, Felicia shook her head with a stern expression.

“You can’t. It is dismissed.”

“You are just like Chris oppa.”

Caitlin muttered with a dissatisfied voice, and Felicia’s eyes sharpened.

“Caitlin, do you really want me to be like Chris? Do you want to cover up your shoulders?”

At Felicia’s threat, Caitlin shut her mouth and went back behind the curtain. Anastasia let out a small laugh.

“It is really good.”

“Caitlin is cute.”

Felicia answered as she hid her face behind the fan and leaned back in the chair. There was still something she had to talk about with Anastasia.

The draconians weren't the only problem. It was important to figure out how to deal with the gandharva, who were the demon king's family. It was natural for the new demon king to release them, but it wasn't that easy. The current queens of the Demon King's Palace knew what the gandharva were guilty of.

This was a sin that couldn't be easily dismissed. Moreover, there could be a bigger mess if the demon king's birth secret was revealed. Of course, letting them stay imprisoned was unreasonable. If the gandharva were left alone, then In-gong would be seen as a puppet of the late demon king.

"We'll have to handle this properly. It is impossible to release them instantly."

Felicia nodded in agreement at Anastasia's words. Shortly after, Caitlin appeared in a new outfit. Felicia was satisfied because her shoulders were revealed while her chest was covered. Caitlin just pouted with a vexed expression.

Anastasia looked between the two people and lifted her cup back up with an elegant posture.

After Caitlin's fitting was over, Anastasia returned to her home and called in a woman who had been waiting. It was the succubus Nayatra, who had the honour of being the 1st concubine.

There would be three queens and one concubine half a year after the coronation. It was truly happening at an unprecedented speed.

'There are two others.'

Anastasia smiled as she thought about Green Wind and the white woman, but she hid her expression. Nayatra was nervous as she seemed to have misunderstood the smile.

"Sit down."

Nayatra was older, but in the first place, age wasn't important in the palace. Nayatra bowed politely and sat in front of Anastasia.

Thanks to Anastasia and Titania working in the background, Nayatra had been able to climb to the position of 1st concubine. It was obvious that the influence of the nightmares would become stronger if the 1st concubine was a nightmare.

The queens and concubines weren't necessarily enemies. Anastasia and Nayatra both understood this, which was why they were facing each other in this position.

Anastasia had already drunk enough tea at the previous meeting, but tea couldn't be left out from a meeting. She took a sip from her teacup, while Nayatra also lifted her cup.

The conversation between the two succubi began.

In no time, it was sunset. After Nayatra left, Anastasia changed clothes and headed to the residence of the demon king.

The first place to be rebuilt in the Demon King's Palace was the demon king's home. Although the construction time was only a month, it could be perfectly completed thanks to the amazing craftsmen called. It could almost be called a piece of art, not a castle.

The demon king—In-gong turned around on the balcony, where he had been waiting for Anastasia. Anastasia appeared elegantly and went to stand close to him. Count Carack, who was the closest to the demon king, bowed and closed the door of the balcony, leaving In-gong and Anastasia alone.

After looking back, In-gong sighed suddenly and turned to Anastasia.

"Noona, is it really okay?"

"What are you talking about?"

"Marrying me."

There was no doubt about it. Anastasia held back her smile and widened her eyes.

"Then is it okay for Felicia and Caitlin?"

“The two of them like me.”

In-gong said with a blush. Anastasia once again smiled and deliberately tilted her head.

“Hrmm... is it like that?”

In-gong’ eyes narrowed. He looked both embarrassed and disgruntled, causing Anastasia to finally laugh.

“Both of them love you enough to die for you. Actually, I just want to restrain them.”

Anastasia shrugged and passed by In-gong to lean against the balcony. A cool breeze was blowing, and she could see the sunset. Anastasia slowly turned around and said,

“Anyway, this is an arranged marriage. But I still like this marriage quite a bit.”

She meant it sincerely. Anastasia smiled at him.

“Isn’t it possible for me to become the demon king’s 1st Queen? Moreover, the other person is you.”

In-gong blushed at her last words, causing Anastasia to laugh again.

“In fact, if you agree, then it won’t be an indifferent arranged marriage.

An arranged marriage was literally a marriage for politics. In the first place, she didn’t have anyone she loved deeply and she wasn’t dissatisfied with In-gong, who she felt quite favourable toward.

“So, you don’t have to worry. Oh, do you dislike it?”

“What about Noona?”

As In-gong replied, Anastasia slipped closer to him slowly. There was a mischievous and dangerous look in her eyes, unlike her usual self.

“Hmm, okay. There is nobody here. Then should I check if you really do taste

delicious?”

“Huh?”

As In-gong was confused, Anastasia moved quickly. She moved into In-gong’s arms and kissed him. Although she was normally quite passive, she was an incredibly active kisser. In-gong didn’t sit still either, so the kiss lasted quite long. After almost 10 minutes, Anastasia moved back with a bemused expression and panted.

“D-Delicious.”

Her face was extremely red, and she seemed like she would explode at any moment. In fact, Anastasia hadn’t intended for such an active kiss. She had just intended for a small touch of their lips. As Anastasia suddenly felt a sense of kinship with Amita who was addicted to the Heavenly Wine, In-gong coughed with a red face. Thanks to that, Anastasia quickly regained her spirit, and both In-gong and Anastasia started laughing.

“Will it work well?”

Anastasia asked frankly, and In-gong immediately nodded.

“I will treat you like Felicia noona and Caitlin noona.”

In-gong said confidently. Therefore, Anastasia felt safe in confiding her secrets to In-gong. Anastasia smiled and shook her head.

“That is my condition. You tend to be too close to the two of them.”

“Like this?”

“Huh?”

Anastasia blinked, and this time In-gong stepped forward. Like the wind, he grabbed Anastasia’s waist and kissed her once again. Anastasia closed her wide eyes slowly.

The sun set and night fell. Anastasia, who lived alone, took out her diary instead of

falling asleep immediately.

As she wrote in her diary with elegant handwriting, Anastasia turned and looked out the window. Gazing out at the night sky, she suddenly remembered the former demon king.

“Going forward, I wonder what will happen?”

The coronation of the new demon king... The opening of a new era had occurred decades earlier than Anastasia had expected.

“Well, it isn’t bad.”

No, it was very good.

Anastasia looked back at her diary and started writing down the last part of her day. After confirming that nobody saw that, she moved her pen again with slightly red ears.

Then one month later...

The wedding ceremony between the demon king and 1st Queen Anastasia was held.

Author's Notes:

Here is an image provided by the author. From left to right: Anastasia, Caitlin and Felicia.



Breakers SS #2

Caitlin's Amazing Day

Today was a very special day.



In the early hours of the morning when the sun rose and the birds began to cry, Caitlin's eyes literally shone as she got up. Her sleep didn't last very long. It was partly due to the fact that her heart was pounding and she was so excited that she couldn't sleep.

However, Caitlin boasted the best stamina among the princesses, since the other two were magicians. She had a means to restore her strength despite staying up all night. Caitlin picked up the glass bottle on her bedside table and smiled widely. There was a sweet smell as soon as she opened the lid.

Caitlin swallowed the special elixir made with the blood of the demon king and rose quickly from the bed. Thanks to the elixir, her skin was smooth and her hair was shiny. Caitlin waited for the maids to come, but there was no one after five minutes. It was still far away from the scheduled time.

Caitlin glanced at the clock. She usually wanted to sleep a bit more, but this time it was the exact opposite.

'Why?'

She wanted to call the maids right away by ringing the bell, but noticed that there was too much time until she was supposed to wake up. In the case of the maids, their working hours were long so some of them wouldn't be ready to start work yet. She felt sorry towards them.

However, she felt like she would die waiting, so Caitlin was conflicted. This wasn't the same summer day as always. No. It was different. Today was a very special day.

It was Caitlin's 17th birthday. At the same time, it was the day when 3rd Queen Caitlin would ascend to the throne.



In the end, Caitlin called the maids 30 minutes earlier than usual and prepared for the ceremony after a simple breakfast. The wedding was scheduled for the afternoon, so there was still a lot of time. However, it was a law that there was always a lack of time when doing the bride's makeup.

Caitlin's cheeks were light pink as she bathed in various bath salts. Seira had to endure her laughter as she watched Caitlin bathing.

"Do you feel that good?"

"Yes."

Caitlin instantly answered. Seira laughed gently as she rubbed Caitlin's shoulders and asked again.

"How good?"

The answer hadn't emerged yet, but the maids in the vicinity bit their lips as they suppressed a laugh. Caitlin's eyes glowed like lanterns as she smiled widely.

"Amazing."

She was like a little child, but the maids sent her warm smiles. Everyone knew why Caitlin was more excited than usual.

1st Queen Anastasia Nekrion's took place one month after the coronation of the new demon king. 2nd Queen Felicia Doomblade's wedding was held two months after the wedding of the 1st Queen.

However, Caitlin Moonlight's wedding ceremony to become the 3rd Queen was only taking place one year after the wedding of 2nd Queen Felicia. The reason was that Caitlin was 'too young.'

Shutra was only a few months younger than Caitlin, but he was the demon king. Caitlin

thought this was unfair and couldn't stop pouting. In any case, Caitlin had to wait a year and several months. The day had finally come.

'If she had to wait until 18 years old as first intended... would she be able to wait?'

Seira smiled and devoted herself to washing Caitlin. She would try to make this the best wedding possible. Caitlin closed her eyes at Seira's familiar touch. There were only a few hours left, causing her heart to pound.



"You are the prettiest in the world."

The bath was over, the wedding dress was worn and the bride's makeup finished. Seira laughed as she stood in front of the Caitlin, who was sitting in the waiting room and waited for her wedding ceremony. And a man was standing tearfully next to Caitlin.

"Who is crying now?"

Chris laughed when Silvan cried at Felicia's wedding, but now he was no different. He wasn't full on crying like Silvan, but tears were falling from his eyes.

"Kuk, the Caitlin who I raised is getting married..."

Chris gazed into the distance as he recalled the past. Caitlin laughed slightly at the sight and said.

"Oppa, aren't you only two years older than me?"

It might be different if it was a four or five year age difference, but it was only two years. But Seira shook her head at Caitlin's rebuttal.

"Princess Caitlin, Prince Chris is correct."

"Eh?"

"You are growing too fast."

Chris smiled and took out a few things. It was a magic tool to record moments, and

Chris played an image of Caitlin as a baby. As the tallest among the children of the demon king, Chris was over two metres tall. When he was two years ago, he was already the size of a child who was one and a half years old.

Caitlin was quiet as the magic images played, while the silent Felicia sighed. She hit the crying Chris and stepped forward.

“Oppa is just a fool.”

Sometimes she thought that Chris was worse than Silvan. Felicia pushed the magic device to the side and concentrated on Caitlin. She didn’t know if it was because Caitlin was 17 or because of the wedding ceremony, but Caitlin looked cute and strong in the white dress.

“So beautiful. I’m slightly jealous.”

“Hehehe.”

Caitlin giggled at Felicia’s wink. She was so cute that Felicia couldn’t help hugging her, making sure not to mess up the makeup. Chris spread open his arms, but Felicia and Caitlin both refused to embrace Chris.



The groom’s waiting room was relatively empty compared to the bride’s full waiting room. It was the main task of the groom to greet the guests, but this was the wedding of the demon king. It was the role of others to go and welcome the guests.

“How is the gossip?”

“It is the same. This is already the third one.”

Carack replied to In-gong’s question. Carack was once a soldier of the Demon King’s Palace, but he was now In-gong’s private secretary. He was the person closest to the demon king. In-gong had no choice but to appoint Carack as the private secretary.

“Umm.”

“Is there something bothering you?”

“No, I was just thinking.”

This was the third wedding ceremony and the three queens were his half sisters. Royalty married their siblings for reasons such as strengthening power or maintaining assets, but it wasn't common or recommended. This was why the draconians strongly recommended that Leticia should be the 1st Queen instead of the 4th.

Of course, the truth was a little different. In-gong wasn't the child of the demon king. He wasn't related to any of his three brides. But even so, he couldn't reveal the truth. It would clearly be an unprecedented scandal.

‘The secret of Caitlin's birth.’

In-gong shared almost all secrets with Felicia, but he kept Caitlin's birth secret to himself. Felicia sincerely loved the demon king so she might not do anything when learning the truth, but he wasn't sure about Elaine.

As In-gong thought about this, Carack laughed.

“Prince, don't you know that you are the hero of the story?”

“Yes.”

In-gong slowly stood up. Anyway, it was nice. Everybody was happy. In-gong glanced at the clock. The time for his wedding was approaching.



Many guests were gathered at the outdoor wedding venue.

If this was an ordinary wedding, most of the guests would be gathered to celebrate the marriage between bride and groom, but the wedding of the demon king was different. Just like the court gathering, the wedding ceremony was a space where many interests intersected.

Felicia, who was sitting next to 1st Queen Anastasia, frowned slightly as she looked at one side of the wedding venue. There was a particularly heavy atmosphere around

where King Zanskal of the draconians was sitting. He might be an elderly man by the standards of the draconians, but he still had a strong energy flowing from his body. Leticia Ragnaros, the one nominated as the 4th Queen was sitting next to him.

“The atmosphere is heavy.”

Felicia muttered as she covered her face with a fan, while Anastasia looked at another place and replied.

“Don’t worry. Nothing will happen.”

Five rebellions had taken place in the one year and several months since In-gong had been crowned the demon king. As Anastasia had worried in the past, there were many people who couldn’t understand In-gong’s power.

But Anastasia didn’t think of the five rebellions as a bad thing. It was the proper place to show off In-gong’s power. Of course, it was funny that a queen was excited about a rebellion, but this was needed to show the power of the new demon king.

The Demon World wasn’t the Human World. It had its own system, but it was a world where the strong dominated everything. There might be some who laughed at peace through force, but that was originally the pace of the Demon World. It was because the demon king was such an absolute leader that an unprecedented peace could occur.

Anastasia’s calm voice made Felicia brighten up.

“Is that so?”

“Yes, so just look at Caitlin. There is no need to worry.”

Felicia followed Anastasia’s gaze towards where Caitlin had entered. As Anastasia said, it was a bright face with no worries.

“Is it possible?”

It was clearly good. There was no reason for Felicia to hate Caitlin’s bright figure. Now Caitlin was also a queen of the Demon King’s Palace. The location, environment, individual roles and responsibilities were all different.

Anastasia looked at Felicia's worried face and laughed elegantly.

"Caitlin can do it. It is the same for you as well. Why do you think I became the 1st Queen?"

Felicia hid her face with her fan at Anastasia's question. Then she replied playfully, "Is it for the sake of power? To reveal your face?"

Anastasia slightly frowned and poked Felicia's side, causing her to swallow back a scream. Then Carack, who watched the queens playing, spoke in a loud voice.

"Queens, it is starting."

It wasn't simply to stop them. Anastasia and Felicia looked at the front as a horn sounded to announce the beginning of the wedding.



The wedding finished with great success. Time passed rapidly and night arrived. Caitlin sat on the bed and looked down at her hands. The ring that Amita made sparkled.

In-gong sat down next to Caitlin with a slightly awkward expression. A few minutes later. Caitlin laughed as she looked at the still awkward In-gong.

"Shutra."

"Huh?"

In-gong turned and saw Caitlin staring shyly at his lips.

"Truly delicious."

They had already kissed a few times already. Caitlin muttered with red cheeks, and took a deep breath before suddenly standing up. She licked her lips slightly and said.

"So... today I will taste you properly."

"Huh?"

The moment that In-gong blinked. Taste him properly? The surprise didn't end there. In-gong felt the Moonlight Core react. The power of Conquest rose and Caitlin became the Apostle of Conquest. The power of wilderness rose inside Caitlin.

"N-Noona?"

"Caitlin."

Caitlin instantly answered. Now they were husband and wife. Caitlin's eyes were even brighter today. But somehow, there was a dangerous light mixed in it.

"C-Caitlin?"

Caitlin didn't stop, despite In-gong's hurried words. She had already learned the theory from Seira. Caitlin took one step closer, causing In-gong to gulp and swiftly awaken his divinity.



The next morning.

Caitlin slowly woke up, after sleeping much longer than usual. He looked towards the source of a pleasant warmth, and saw In-gong sleeping. She hugged him before going back to sleep. Then Seira opened the door, as if she knew the right time. She came to wake up In-gong and Caitlin, but they didn't wake up despite Seira waiting a long time.

Time passed again, and it was almost afternoon when In-gong and Caitlin woke up from their deep sleep. Caitlin woke up but she didn't want to leave the bed, so they ate the prepared breakfast and lunch on it. In-gong gulped as he looked at Caitlin's side profile and asked in a coy voice.

"How was it?"

Caitlin blinked and her cheeks turned red. She laughed like she always did.

"Shutra is amazing."

As always, a special day began. It was the day the of the 8th Princess, no 3rd Queen

Caitlin Moonlight.

Breakers SS #3

Felicia's Special Day

The demon king had three queens.

The most prominent one among the three queens was 1st Queen Anastasia Nekrion. She was a powerful influence both inside and outside the castle, to the point that people said there was another demon king in the palace.

Among the former queens of the Demon King's Palace, there were a few who were similar to Anastasia. Titania Nekrion, her mother, was famous for her political power and talent. The 3rd and 4th former queens were also the owners of a tough political power.

But there was a crucial difference between them and Anastasia.

2nd Queen Titania Nekrion couldn't make the 3rd and 4th Queens join her side. Even the 3rd and 4th Queens, who were known to be quite close, didn't have a fully cooperative relationship. And above them, there was the 1st Queen who could be called Zanskal's agent.

The queens of the former demon king all kept each other in check. No matter their exceptional abilities, there was a limit to raising their voices in the palace.

But Anastasia was different.

Anastasia had a good relationship with the 2nd and 3rd Queens, who were her half-siblings. The 2nd and 3rd Queens didn't keep her in check. Rather, they gave her strength, so the environment itself was different from the other queens.

She was truly unbeatable in the Demon King's Palace because she had half-sisters as the queens, or because the demon king was truly in love with his queens. Count Carack, who stayed in the shadows, was able to block her, but he also maintained a friendly relationship with the 1st Queen.

Now 1st Queen Anastasia ruled the queens' decree, but she kept to the appropriate line. All of her actions was for the 'demon king and Demon King's Palace.' She stated that she was the queen, not the demon king.

After 1st Queen Anastasia, the one who stood out was 3rd Queen Caitlin Moonlight. She was regarded as the mascot of the Demon King's Palace, and represented it whenever there was a foreign event.

The 1st Queen had the most power in the palace, but the 3rd Queen was the one who appeared as the demon king's partner in most events. For that reason, there were many in the Demon World who chose the 3rd Queen as the most favoured queen.

Compared to the prominent 1st and 3rd Queens, 2nd Queen Felicia Doomblade wasn't so conspicuous. She often held tea parties as one of the queens, but she didn't meet with the main people inside the palace or show up to outside events like the 3rd Queen.

Because of that, 2nd Queen Felicia was treated as the queen of emptiness, who didn't have both power or love. Some even compared 2nd Queen Felicia to former 1st Queen Aishar Ragnaros, because both of them were trapped in the Demon King's Palace without noticeable activity.

In fact, that was very wrong. 2nd Queen Felicia was indeed bound to the Demon King's Palace. But the reasons for it were different from the expectations of others.

"Shutra is too much."

Felicia cried out as she laid the pen down in front of piles of paper stacked like a mountain on her desk. Unlike the criticism of Felicia doing 'nothing', she was suffering every day.

The demon king was suddenly crowned, so his support base was weak. There were supporters of the queens, but it was naturally lacking compared to the former demon king.

The scarcest thing was the number of the trustworthy servants. The draconians, who boasted the most powerful forces in the Demon World, were in a political confrontation with the demon king.

Of course, it was possible for each queen to bring in people from the outside, but a ruler with a weak political base would make the kingdom shaky. 1st Queen Anastasia also prevented the influence of the former queen Titania Nekrion, causing a chronic shortage of workers.

‘I committed to filling that gap.’

She couldn’t give the task to Caitlin, who wasn’t an adult yet and who would be clumsy with paperwork.

‘Someone who eats meat can’t be seen to be eating.’

Anastasia had said as she handed over a large amount of paperwork to Felicia. Of course, Anastasia was also suffering from a tremendous amount of pressure, so Felicia couldn’t complain.

“Anyway, Shutra is too much. Is he too busy to meet me? This hobby is very exhausting.”

It wouldn’t have been so difficult if it was only paperwork. The greatest cause for Felicia not leaving her desk all day was the demon king.

‘Please, Noona is the only one who can do this.’

She closed her eyes and could still recall In-gong begging her in a sweet voice. His pheromones were fully released so she couldn’t refuse at the time. No, she didn’t even think about rejecting it as she nodded.

So, her days were busy. It had been over two years, but she still hadn’t finished the task.

Felicia took a breath again and lifted a piece of paper. It was from Amita.

–There isn’t enough Heavenly Wine! I should receive five Heavenly Wines for the wedding dress and wedding gifts. Heavenly Wine! Heavenly Wine!

Felicia briefly looked at the paper and frowned. The contents of Amita’s protest were correct, but she wasn’t frowning because of Amita.

‘There have been a few concubine interviews already.’

She could understand it with her head. The previous demon king had over 10 concubines. It was a tradition of the Demon King’s Palace to use arranged marriages to deepen their relationship with other species in the Demon World.

But this was this, and that was that. Even time a new concubine entered for assessment, Felicia oversaw the screening, filing, etc.

‘But are concubines really necessary?’

It would be nice if a concubines weren’t needed. Felicia murmured before focusing on the papers again. It had already two years but Amita still didn’t know that the main ingredient of the Heavenly Wine was the demon king.

‘Won’t it be really serious if they know?’

Maybe Amita might turn into a woman to become a queen or concubine candidate. The memory of when Caitlin said ‘Shutra is delicious~’ flashed through her head. Amita was originally someone who became a fool over the Heavenly Wine.

Felicia smiled and wrote down her acceptance on the piece of paper. They could make many transactions due to the Heavenly Wine. It was better to listen to this demand.

She filled in a few more documents before receiving one concerning Carack. It was about the manor that Carack ruled, and Felicia paused for a moment as she recalled Delia, who was Carack’s 1st wife and master of his estate. Delia’s belly had been slightly swollen a few months ago, so she would give birth soon.

‘Oh my god.’

Delia would become a mother. Felicia couldn’t help laughing and unconsciously touched her belly. She thought it would still be a while before she had a child, but it was a strange feeling.

“Hrmm.”

Felicia spread out her fan and bit her lips. It was at that moment.

“Unni!”

Caitlin opened the door to her office. Even though she became a queen, she still dressed in clothing comfortable for fighting.

“Caitlin.”

Felicia meant for her to calm down a bit, but Caitlin kept approaching Felicia with flushed cheeks.

“Unni, I brought you a gift.”

Every time Caitlin went on a trip for an event, she would bring back a souvenir. This time it was a small box, so Felicia could guess by the size and shape of the box.

“Is it food?”

In fact, Caitlin often brought food as gifts. Caitlin nodded.

“Yes yes, it is a really delicious special product. It is delicious, but not as much as Shutra.”

Felicia smiled and opened the box. A sweet scent filled her nose.



“Well, this is truly more delicious.”

Deep in the night, Felicia suddenly spoke in the middle of a passionate kiss. The words were strange, but In-gong laughed and stroked Felicia’s cheeks.

“Noona is also delicious. Delicious like chocolate.”

“That makes me cringe.”

It wasn’t a joke. No, who did he learn that from? Was it from Carack?

But In-gong just kissed her again and licked his lips.

“Yes, it really is the taste of chocolate.”

It was nonsense. Unlike In-gong who was like living food, Felicia was an ordinary dark elf.

But Felicia was curious so she asked with a slight frown, “What is chocolate?”

“Well, it is like this.”

In-gong approached Felicia again, causing her to shyly close her eyes. There was a sweetness that stimulated the tip of her tongue.



“Ah, it is a good ending.”

The man opened the cover of the virtual reality device and took off the helmet with a satisfied expression. On one side of the virtual reality device, the name ‘Knight Saga Re’ clearly appeared.

‘It truly is well made.’

In-gong lightly touched the title on the screen before raising his body. The clock showed that it had been one hour already.

‘My parents will come soon.’

In-gong reached out to the Knight Saga Re package on the desk. There were illustrations of the characters on the front, with some conspicuous ones. Felicia, Caitlin and Anastasia. As he gently brushed a hand over the illustrations, a voice was heard behind him.

“Master, why am I missing?”

Green Wind solidified and looked at the package with a disgruntled face. Then someone spoke like she was stupid.

“That is just a game that a human made from recorded history. It is natural that it can’t contain everything from our world.”

It was the white woman. The two people always fought but the white woman always won. But today was a bit different. In-gong laughed at their expressions and said.

“No, Greenie is also here.”

“Hmm?”

The white woman asked with surprise. Green Wind’s eyes sparkled with elation as she bragged.

“I am also on here. What is this?”

This was only one set of illustrations, so not everyone appeared. Green Wind was elated by In-gong’s words, while he dealt the heaviest blow to the white woman.

“Of course, Conquest doesn’t appear.”

This caused the white woman to pout, while Green Wind poked out her tongue. Green Wind was the only one who could make the mild-mannered white woman like this. Instead of watching the reversed relationship between the two, In-gong placed the package back on the desk. Then In-gong heard a strange voice.

“Ahut... ah... eung...”

“It is just a massage chair. Noona doesn’t need to make sounds like that.”

In-gong glanced at Felicia who was sitting in the massage chair. But she didn’t listen to him as she kept moaning.

Exactly three years.

It was the amount of time Felicia took to create magic that traveled between worlds. It was the result of Conquest’s knowledge and the Demon King’s Palace vast resources, but it was truly a great accomplishment.

“Shutra, this is amazing!”

Caitlin smiled widely as she ate something on the table. In-gong laughed and nodded.

“Chicken and Cola are great.”

It was chicken made an hour ago, but she was still eating it. Of course, there was a lot.

“I think this is too small for a demon king.”

Anastasia, who was sitting on the couch, looked around and said with a displeased expression. It was a big apartment but for Anastasia, it felt like a room.

‘Well, it is natural.’

She had been a princess since she was born.

“Prince, can I eat some more?”

Carack, who was rummaging through the fridge and kitchen, asked In-gong. The rice cooker for six people looked like nothing in Carack’s big hand.

‘I shouldn’t have brought him.’

But it was only for a second. From the moment In-gong first thought of traveling between words, he expected to go with Carack.

‘We will go back in two days.’

It wasn’t ordinary to be able to move between worlds, so the magic couldn’t be used at any time. There were many things involved, but In-gong didn’t know the details. Felicia and Anastasia just said there was nothing they could do for two days.

“Noona, you can get up now.”

In-gong forcibly turned off the massage chair and pulled Felicia up, while she muttered in a blank voice.

“Uhh... a massage chair is the devil’s invention.”

“It is because of Noona.”

He had never seen such a sensitive reaction to a massage chair. Was this due to the nature of the dark elves? After a cup of cold water, Felicia trembled like she had regained her spirit. She turned to In-gong with a more focused expression and asked.

“Shutra, are your parents coming now?”

“Yes, although I don’t know if they will understand.”

His face and body had changed. He thought of ways to convince them, but he wondered if things would turn out that well.

“It will turn out okay. Shutra.”

Felicia smiled, as if telling him not to worry. In the Demon King’s Palace, ‘Shutra’ was a magic word that made anything possible.

“Please explain it if I become stuck.”

“Believe in me.”

“Yes, I’ll let you experience the taste of chocolate.”

In-gong gently kissed Felicia and looked back at the front door. At that moment, Felicia’s ears pricked and she stiffened. She could hear footsteps beyond the door.

“They’re coming.”

Caitlin put down the chicken and Cola, while Carack closed the refrigerator door. Anastasia remained elegant, but her shoulders were slightly stiffened due to tension. In-gong gulped. Felicia grasped In-gong’s hand tightly. The two people reflexively exchanged glances and laughed.

Many things happened, but these two people were always together.

Then the door opened. At the same time, In-gong and Felicia opened their mouths.



PDF by: traitorAIZEN